



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
University of Toronto

CA1
Z 1 (2)
-74M21

MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE INQUIRY

Government
Publication

IN THE MATTER OF APPLICATION BY EACH OF
(a) CANADIAN ARCTIC GAS PIPELINE LIMITED FOR A
RIGHT-OF-WAY THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS
CROWN LANDS WITHIN THE YUKON TERRITORY AND
THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES; AND
(b) FOOTHILLS PIPE LINES LTD. FOR A RIGHT-OF-WAY
WITHIN THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES,
FOR THE PURPOSE OF A PROPOSED MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPE-
LINE

and

IN THE MATTER OF THE SOCIAL, ENVIRONMENTAL AND
ECONOMIC IMPACT REGIONALLY OF THE CONSTRUCTION,
OPERATION AND SUBSEQUENT ABANDONMENT OF THE ABOVE
PROPOSED PIPELINE

(Before the Honourable Mr. Justice Berger, Commissioner)

Inuvik, N.W.T.

February 13, 1976

PROCEEDINGS AT INQUIRY

Volume 124

APPEARANCES:

Mr. Ian G. Scott, Q.C.,
Mr. Stephen T. Goudge,
Mr. Alick Ryder and
Mr. Ian Roland for Mackenzie Valley Pipeline
Inquiry;

Mr. Pierre Genest, Q.C.,
Mr. Jack Marshall, and
Mr. Darryl Carter for Canadian Arctic Gas
Pipeline Limited;
Mr. Reginald Gibbs, Q.C.,
Mr. Alan Hollingworth &
Mr. John W. Lutes, for Foothills Pipe Lines Ltd.;

Mr. Russell Anthony &
Pro. Alastair Lucas for Canadian Arctic Resources
Mr. Garth Evans Committee;

Mr. Glen W. Bell and
Mr. Gerry Sutton, for Northwest Territories
Indian Brotherhood, and
Metis Association of the
Northwest Territories;

Mr. John Bayly
or
Miss Leslie Lane for Inuit Tapirisat of Canada,
and The Committee for
Original Peoples Entitle-
ment;

Mr. Ron Veale and
Mr. Allen Lueck for The Council for the Yukon
Indians;

Mr. Carson H. Templeton, for Environment Protection
Board;

Mr. David Reesor for Northwest Territories
Association of Municipal-
ities;

Mr. Murray Sigler for Northwest Territories
Chamber of Commerce.

Mr. John Ballem, Q.C., for Producer Companys;

347
11835
V01.124

I N D E X

Page

WITNESSES FOR C.O.P.E. :

Allen MILNE

Charles Peter LEWIS

James M. SHEARER

- In Chief

- Cross-Examination by Mr. Veale

- Cross-Examination by Mr. Evans

18871

18995

19005

EXHIBITS:

465 Minutes of Environmental Social Committee
Task Force on Northern Oil Development

18969

466 Qualifications & evidence of J. Shearer

18994

467 Qualifications & evidence of C.P.Lewis

18994

468 Qualifications & evidence of A.R.Milne

18994

Q That you followed this
by employment with the Defense Research Board of Canada
at the Defense Research Establishment of the Pacific in

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 1955?

2 A Yes, that's true.

3 Q That your work there was
4 involved with acoustics research underwater?

5 A That's true.

6 Q That you have Arctic
7 experience which includes a number of expeditions led
8 into the Arctic, numbering approximately twenty?

9 A Yes, that's true.

10 Q And that you're a Fellow
11 of the Arctic Institute of North America and until Novem-
12 ber, 1973, you headed the Arctic acoustic group?

13 A Yes. That's right.

14 Q And that you're now working
15 with the Department of the Environment as head of the
16 Arctic marine group?

17 A Yes.

18 Q And that you were the
19 project manager of the Beaufort Sea project about which
20 we have heard something at this Inquiry?

21 A Yes.

22 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner,
23 we'll begin with the evidence of Mr. Shearer. The only
24 change from the format as is found in the prepared
25 evidence that's before you, is I have requested that
26 Mr. Milne give you a short review of the Beaufort Sea
27 project as he is the manager of it, so that you'll know
28 what its terms of reference and its studies involved.

29 WITNESS SHEARER: This is a
30 panel presenting essentially the physical environment

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 properties of the Beaufort Sea. A background discus-
2 sion of the physical properties and features of the
3 Beaufort Sea will be given. The basis for presenting
4 this information at this time, is that it is felt that
5 much of the basis for petroleum industry's activity in
6 the Mackenzie Delta, is the potential of the sedimentary
7 basin underlying the continental shelf of the Beaufort
8 Sea.

9 The panel will deal mainly with
10 physical features and processes encountered in the
11 Beaufort Sea, consisting of:

12 The near surface geology and
13 bottom of the sea and its features specifically related
14 to Beaufort Sea including offshore pingos, sea bottom
15 permafrost and sea bottom scouring, entitled "Bottom
16 Features of the Beaufort Sea", given by myself.

17 The coastal zone where the
18 transition between the land areas and the Beaufort Sea take
19 place given by Peter Lewis entitled "Physical Aspects
20 of the Beaufort Sea Coast".

21 Allen Milne will be presenting
22 "Aspects of Climate and Oceanographic Properties of the
23 Beaufort Sea", specifically, those related to harsh
24 weather conditions, the nature of ice movements and timing
25 of breakup and will be discussed in his presentation of
26 "Preliminary Environmental Assessment of Offshore Drilling
27 for Oil in the Beaufort Sea".

28 All three presentations will
29 deal with these topics in the context of offshore oil
30 exploration and possible future production.

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 The Beaufort Sea is commonly
2 considered that area of the Arctic Ocean which borders
3 the land masses from Point Barrow, Alaska to the Arctic
4 Islands in Canada and runs the great circle route
5 directly from Point Barrow to Prince Patrick. I was
6 wondering if we could have the lights --

7
8
9 The light color on the
10 slide is the Continental Shelf area of the Beaufort Sea
11 we'll be dealing with in more detail. Can we have the
12 next one Lorraine?

13 In the southern Beaufort Sea,
14 off the Mackenzie Delta, the seasonal variation in
15 temperature and sediment load is most severe because
16 of the contrast in Mackenzie River runoff from winter
17 to summer. The river runoff is much higher in the
18 summer, containing a much larger sediment load than in
19 the wintertime. ERTS satellite photographs of the
20 western Canadian Arctic Continental Shelf from Herschel
21 Island to just east of Kugmallit Bay show a northeast
22 trend along the edge of the Tuk Peninsula for Mackenzie
23 River runoff.

24 This easterly moving longshore
25 current is predominant throughout the year and is some-
26 what more pronounced in the summertime when the Mackenzie
27 outflow is higher. The Coriolis force associated with
28 this higher volume outflow is thought to be
29 one of the major influences determining this particular
30 direction. Because of the law of conservation of momen-

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 tum, any major movement northwards on the earth's sur-
2 face will veer towards the east in the northern hemisphere.

3 MR. BAYLY: I wonder if you
4 could illustrated that on this slide so that we can see how
5 that works, Mr. Shearer.

6 A The Mackenzie Delta is
7 right here. Most of the outflow comes out of Shallow
8 Bay. Some of the channels on the east side here and
9 most of the sediment load is pulled to the east and runs
10 along in this direction. It appeared most of it is
11 actually deposited into this particular triangle here.
12 It appears this is the main reason for these contours.
13 Let's take the fifty meter contour. It is very far
14 offshore here and runs very closely to shore. The thirty
15 meter contour runs right into shore here so that the
16 bottom -- the original base of the sedimentation here
17 was flat across the bottom and it is preferentially
18 filled on this side. We feel that it is preferentially
19 filled on that side because of the turning towards the
20 east of most of the currents coming out of the Mackenzie.

21 The presence of this Mackenzie
22 water modifies the ambient marine environment with a
23 warm fresh water layer between 15 and 20 meters thick,
24 extending sometimes far offshore to the shelf edge.
25 Where it touches the bottom in water depths less than
26 15 - 20 meters, there exists a mean annual temperature
27 on the bottom much warmer (slightly above zero) than at
28 greater depths where the temperatures were found to be
29 below zero (between -1 and -1.5° C) even in the summer-
30 time. So we would presume that the mean annual temperature

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 of the bottom waters at depths greater than 20 meters,
2 would be negative. At depths less than two meters,
3 shorefast ice touches the bottom for eight or nine
4 months of the year, allowing conductive heat transfer
5 to the bottom, thus causing temperatures to be even
6 less than -1.5°C . I might add that the lowest temperature
7 sea water of 35 parts per thousand could go is about
8 -1.8°C .

9 The presence of continental
10 glaciers over the North American continent some 15 to
11 30,000 years ago tied up much of the ocean's water,
12 lowering the world-wide sea level some 100 meters.
13 On this particular map here, the 100 meter line would
14 be the furthest -- the one furthest towards the top
15 and right along the shelf edge so that the implication
16 is that that whole area was exposed to low mean annual
17 air temperatures.

18 The result of such conditions,
19 the exposure of the shelf to low mean annual air temp-
20 eratures, for 10,000 to 20,000 years, was the formation
21 of a permafrost layer some 200 to 300 meters thick.
22 Upon transgression (sea level rise), when the glaciers
23 melted the sea level's water went back to the sea and
24 the sea level rose again -- submergence of these pre-
25 viously exposed areas -- after submergence of these
26 exposed areas, sorry -- the regime of permafrost growth
27 was altered. Presumably, as the sea transgressed over
28 any given point, a positive temperature existed for a
29 few thousand years, when the water depths were between
30 -2 and -20 meters. This is assuming what's happening

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 today, happened in the past and that there is a warm
2 water zone at depths between -2 and -20 meters. So,
3 we're sort of extrapolating into the past.

4 This being the case, degradation
5 and melting of the top of any existing permafrost would
6 have taken place. In other words, we can see a zone of
7 permafrost 200 to 300 meters thick developing in the
8 offshore just the way it develops in the Tuktoyaktuk
9 Peninsula today and when the sea advanced over this, just
10 as ^{you} could have, perhaps, the sea coming over Tuktoyaktuk
11 Peninsula now, over a period of thousands of years; when
12 the sea level is between -2 and -20, its temperature
13 was slightly above zero so that there would have been
14 downward melting from the very top of this permafrost.

15 It is thought that melting of
16 the top down to some 50 to 70 meters below the sea
17 bottom took place during that few thousand years. As
18 the sea level continued to rise, and depths greater than
19 20 meters occurred over any given point, the advent of
20 below zero temperatures (-0.5 to -1.5) would have reversed
21 the trend and caused renewed downward freezing. I'm
22 sorry, this all sounds very complicated.

23 This refreezing from the surface
24 downwards implies the existence of frozen ground on the
25 surface. Nevertheless, on many seismic records, the top
26 of the permafrost is still apparently at -50 meters or
27 so, below the sea bottom. Could we have number three?
28 I'll just go up and explain. The seismic record taken
29 from a boat using an airgun sound source and a very
30 sensitive hydrophone to receive the signal that the air gun

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 sends out through the water. This is the water surface
2 here and this is the bottom and the signal, it's a
3 sound signal that is sent outwards in all directions.
4 It hits the bottom and returns the signal from the
5 bottom and a return signal from various horizons under-
6 neath the bottom. Now, this isn't a very good seismic
7 record but what it serves to ^{point} out is that over here we
8 feel that we've got a very strong reflector that dies
9 out quite quickly in this direction. We feel that this
10 is representing frozen ground. A colleague of mine
11 working up here, Jim Hunter has done some refraction
12 seismic over this and it is a somewhat similar method
13 of obtaining velocities, seismic velocities within
14 these sediments and he obtained a very high velocity at
15 this depth. A velocity of roughly ten to 12 thousand
16 feet a second which can only be explained in this area,
17 because it's all very soft sediments by frozen ground.

18 THE COMMISSIONER: I still
19 don't understand this. I thought that the theory was
20 that as the sea covered the exposed ground which had
21 been frozen when the sea level was lower, that it
22 would have thawed and then as you got to a depth --
23 a greater and greater depth -- you would get refreezing,
24 but it would be at the surface -- not the surface, but
25 the bottom -- and that appears to be some distance
26 beneath the sea bed.

27 A Right. O.K. -I was just
28 getting into -- there seems to be a discrepancy in
29 terms of our model to what we find offshore.

30 Nevertheless, on many seismic records, the top

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 of the permafrost is still apparently at -50 meters
2 below the bottom and as you say, you would have expected
3 it to be freezing from the surface down and I would
4 feel that theoretically, there's been enough time to
5 freeze right from the surface back to this lower layer. Two
6 main reasons for this apparent disagreement are that
7 There is a sedimentary change at this level with the over-
8 lying very finely grained sediments and because of
9 their small pore spaces, refreezing at these temperatures
10 would not have occurred. This would assume that the
11 original theory of freezing down to -200 to 300 meters
12 that this top layer might not have frozen as well, but
13 we weren't around then, so we don't know. I think
14 in your geotechnical discussions in phase one, you were
15 probably shown that very fine grained sediments -- in
16 very fine grained sediments, you can have a lot of un-
17 frozen pore water at very cold temperatures. So I
18 think if at say -1.5°C , here, if you had a certain
19 very fine clay or silt, it would not freeze.

20 The second possibility, is
21 that the material is sandy with large pore spaces that
22 became filled with salt water during the couple of
23 thousand years when they were unfrozen, so that you
24 would effectively saturate the sediments with salt water
25 and then of course they wouldn't refreeze because they're
26 the same as the water on the surface.

27 In some nearshore areas, frozen
28 ground may be found very close to the surface because
29 shoreline retreat is very high and frozen ground has not
30 had enough time to respond to the average positive temp-

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 eratures in the shallow water zones.

2 With a change in mean annual
3 temperature on the surface from -10° to -1.5 , the new
4 base of the permafrost layer would be much closer to
5 the surface. The reason for this is that the new equil-
6 ibrium depth for the bottom of the permafrost where
7 the heat loss to the surface from the cold is equal to the
8 heat gain from the center of the earth, would be much
9 shallower when temperatures -- No, I think I made a
10 mistake there. It should be much shallower when the
11 temperatures were -1.5 and not -10 .

12 Offshore permafrost then,
13 figure four, is a relict phenomena formed 20, 000 years
14 ago, with the top being preserved by the presently
15 existing conditions, and the top could be in a frozen
16 or unfrozen state. This is a figure. The red is a
17 figure of where seismic refraction has picked up
18 evidence of frozen ground. The yellow is where it
19 seems to be intermittent and the blue is where it seems
20 to be absent and this is no comment as to how far down
21 below the bottom we find it. Just the fact that it's
22 present or it's not present.

23 Yes , this particular map
24 was calculated using the front ends of seismic records
25 from Gulf Oil's Offshore Seismic Program and we'll get
26 into later why the Mackenzie Bay area on the lower
27 left side doesn't have any frozen ground.

28 Not all areas offshore became
29 frozen when exposed above sea level during the last
30 glacial period. As on the Tuktoyaktuk Peninsula now,

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 large lakes where the ice did not freeze to the bottom
2 in winter have a perennial layer of unfrozen fresh
3 water underneath. Likewise, underneath deep river
4 channels, greater than six feet deep, many of the narrow,
5 deep channels of the Mackenzie Delta, the soils may
6 be unfrozen. With the onset of the sea level rise
7 and replacement of this unfrozen fresh water (this
8 is on the exposed Continental Shelf). I have to say
9 that again. With the onset of the sea level rise
10 and replacement of this unfrozen fresh water in these
11 previously protected deep lakes, by salt water at
12 negative temperatures, a unique feature developed.
13 The formation of subsea pingos, approximately 125 dis-
14 covered to date is another significant morphological
15 feature occurring after submergence.

16 This, again is a seismic
17 record with the scales were actually put on incorrectly
18 on that map and where I've got a rough zero line is
19 where the real sea surface was, but this is -- the
20 dark line you see in the middle of the figure is the
21 shape of the bottom and the pimple-like feature we
22 see there is what we call a subsea pingo and in this
23 particular figure, it has very much the profile of
24 pingos, say at the Tuk Peninsula area, etc.; if you
25 notice the scale, the scales aren't equal in the
26 horizontal and vertical directions so that that par-
27 ticular feature is actually a lot flatter than it
28 really looks there.

29 Note also, the sub-bottom
30 horizons running underneath the pingo. I'll just point

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 those out. This particular dark line here is a reflector
2 that was picked up by the seismic energy here and sent
3 back to the recorder. This is the bottom and there's
4 enough energy in the airgun to go down into the bottom
5 and pick up this particular horizon. It sort of runs
6 off like this and this particular one here runs straight
7 across the bottom. It's specifically these, the behavior,
8 the orientation of these horizons that we feel that
9 this is a subsea pingo and not some kind of mud lump
10 that you get in other deltas of the world. Not the
11 Mackenzie Delta because a mud lump would have formed
12 by a compaction of sediments from say a number of hundreds
13 of feet down and you would not have a line running right
14 across the bottom like that. You would have everything
15 curved up and you would see that it would look like a
16 plug that had come up from underneath.

17 Pingos in the subsea mode
18 are formed by the same mechanism as those formed in
19 the subaerial environment, except that they have
20 formed in response to a negative mean annual bottom
21 water temperature of -1.5°C compared to the low mean
22 annual air temperature of about -10°C .

23 Upon examination of the de-
24 tailed bathymetric maps, these features are found to
25 exist over much of the continental shelf, but are absent
26 over a broad area northwest of the Mackenzie River Delta.
27 Could we go back to two, please? Great. The small
28 dots you see on the top and righthand side are the
29 locations of subsea pingos. There's quite a few more
30 further to the right, but the slide doesn't go over that

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 far, further east off the Tuk Peninsula.

2 The trough observed, somewhat
3 of an aside here. The trough observed in the chart has
4 been called the Mackenzie Canyon and is thought to have
5 been the locale of a large ice tongue which ran out the
6 Mackenzie Delta during the last glaciation. This
7 explains why no offshore permafrost is found here, be-
8 cause the area wasn't exposed to low mean annual air
9 temperatures. In other words, there was a large ice
10 tongue. I'll just go and point that out. The proper
11 name would be Piedmont Ice Tongue which gives Mr. Bayly
12 a kick.

13 We feel that a large ice
14 tongue came up the Mackenzie Delta and essentially
15 carved a canyon right down here. It's really the
16 ancestor of Mackenzie Bay and it would have been active
17 in this area probably a wet base glacier with tempera-
18 tures around zero so that no permafrost would have
19 developed in this area. This is the reason for figure
20 four, I think, with blue, mainly in this area. There's
21 a large blue area in here which we haven't really come
22 to any conclusion why there is none over here because if
23 you had a large ice tongue coming down here and
24 lower sea level, the shoreline along this edge over here.
25 This whole area would have been exposed, as the
26 Tuk Peninsula is down and subject to the same features.

27 Mackenzie Bay and the Beau-
28 fort Sea receive sediment mainly from Mackenzie River
29 runoff and from erosion of the shoreline by wave action
30 and melting of ground ice in the summertime. Thickness

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 of sediments^{are} very high in the Mackenzie Bay with a
2 significant decrease from over 300 feet to 30 feet or
3 less, as one moves further east. Generally, much of
4 the sediment observed (figure six) to the east was
5 deposited in river channels at the time of lower sea
6 level and does not really represent recent deposition
7 of Mackenzie River sediments. I'll just explain this.

8 This is a contour line of sedi-
9 ment thickness and I have it written as twenty meters
10 here. It's much thicker. It's up to a hundred meters
11 in cases generally in this bay and becomes -- there's
12 a ten meter, another ten meter in here and we feel
13 that during the times of lower sea level the East
14 Channel that takes -- deviates from the main Mackenzie
15 Delta at Tununuk running down here, we feel that it
16 ran out this particular -- in this particular direction,
17 during times of lower sea level and with the shoreline
18 in this area. So that I think a lot of the sediments
19 we picked up here in our very high frequency ecosound-
20 ing are, in fact, sediments deposited when the sea
21 level is lower in the east -- and they are all East
22 Channel sediments. Nevertheless most -- we feel that
23 most of the sedimentation from the Mackenzie River
24 ends up in Mackenzie Bay and there is sort of exponen-
25 tially decreasing thickness down to thirty feet and
26 even less than ten feet over. This is a three-- these
27 wide areas are three meter contours so that there is
28 sediment over the whole Beaufort Continental Shelf but
29 it's quite thin. It's five or ten feet thick over
30 most of it, except for these channels and we feel they

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 may be altered.

2 So up to now, we've dealt
3 with two particular phenomena which we find on the
4 Beaufort Shelf; Offshore permafrost and offshore
5 pingos. Now, we'll spend some time with the scouring
6 problem.

7 It's been found in both the
8 Alaskan and Canadian Arctic Continental Shelves that
9 large ice islands and -- O.K., I'll explain these
10 figures, first and then continue the sentence. This
11 is a figure of an ice island around -- aground -- in
12 about forty feet of water on the west side of Mackenzie
13 Bay. Note the horizontal laminations in the ice. The
14 island is roughly fifty meters across and six meters
15 high above the water line. This is very similar in
16 size to the next figure, which is a pressure ridge, a
17 multi-year pressure ridge. This shows a large chunk
18 of -- oops, excuse me. This is a multi-year pressure
19 ridge, thought to be aground in about eighty feet of
20 water, some forty miles north of Tuktoyaktuk. It's
21 about seventy meters across and ten meters above the
22 waterline, so it's slightly larger than the ice island
23 you saw before. Note the irregular chunks from which
24 it's composed and both these pieces of ice rise roughly
25 a quarter of their total height above the waterline. So
26 it's one above and three below, is what it seems to be
27 for most of these floating pieces of ice island and
28 pressure ridge.

29 O.K., I'll begin that
30 sentence again. Large ice islands and pressure ridges

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 figure seven and eight when frozen into the polar pack,
2 may encounter the bottom -- which is the next figure --
3 forming trenches or scours, kilometers in length and
4 up to ten meters in relief. This is just a photograph
5 of a small piece of ice with a lot of dirt frozen onto
6 the bottom and I sort of intuitively feel it's from
7 running aground and then the iceberg was melted during
8 the summer and we have pieces of the bottom frozen into
9 the ice floating to the surface where we can see them,
10 although it is possible that this formed at the shore-
11 line and you had spring melting and the stuff came
12 down, froze on the ice and then drifted out. But I
13 don't think so, mainly because of the chunky nature
14 of the ice that this kind of ice doesn't exist that
15 close to shore; although I could certainly be wrong
16 on that.

17 The water depths to which
18 scouring is significant is defined by the draught of
19 ice fragments floating in the ice pack. The thickest
20 observed pressure ridge, to date, was found from a
21 Polaris submarine to be 153 feet below mean sea level.
22 All the ice islands as we saw in figure seven, for
23 example, found in the Canada basin section of the Arctic
24 Ocean and western side of the archipelago come from
25 the Ward Hunt ice shelf on Ellesmere Island. These ice
26 islands have been found to have a maximum draft of
27 about 120 feet.

28 Just as an exercise, if they're
29 120 feet thick and one quarter is above water, you
30 would expect that they could touch the bottom at, say,

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 ninety feet of water -- eighty, ninety feet of water.

2 Scouring is a cumulative
3 process such that with time, enough scours may exist
4 in any one given area, so that when further scouring
5 occurs, an older scour is overrun. This phenomena is
6 called saturation -- the saturation level and is
7 expressed generally as the largest average number of
8 scours observed per kilometer -- around fifteen to
9 twenty. Yes, this is a slide which I think I mentioned
10 last time on cross-examination two weeks ago when I
11 was questioned about this, and it's particularly the
12 top -- the graph is just the number of scours found
13 at given depth. I'll just point it out, it looks
14 difficult to read.

15 This is zero, ten, twenty
16 scours. Zero, twentyfive feet, fifty feet, seventyfive
17 feet, a hundred feet. This would be water depth. So,
18 when we run our sidescan equipment over these particular
19 depths, and I'll be getting into that in a minute; at
20 these various water depths, we see this number of
21 scours per kilometer. At first sight, you would say
22 "O.K. we have most of our scouring happening at fifty
23 to one hundred feet,"but I don't think this is the
24 case. I think it's in slightly shallower water and
25 that in deeper water you reach the saturation level
26 after a number of years, so that this represents total--
27 essentially total scours and after twenty and twentytwo,
28 everytime you add another one, you're erasing one
29 before, so you that you never get higher than that
30 particular number. But, if you could actually record

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 every scour, for every time ice hit bottom in a particu-
2 lar depth, I think between fifty and seventyfive, would
3 be away much higher.

4 Yes. The time taken to reach
5 this saturation level is unknown, but it is presumed
6 to be much less in shallower water. Most scouring is
7 thought to take place in water depths of ten to thirty
8 meters and with time, gradual accumulation of scours
9 at greater depths will occur and the saturation level
10 will be reached. Beyond 150 feet, it is assumed that
11 not enough time has yet passed for this number to be
12 reached. The paucity in very shallow water of less than
13 twentyfive feet, is thought to be due to a combination
14 of higher sediment infilling and the lack of scouring
15 because of shorefast ice. And I think that most scouring
16 occurs in the wintertime when these pressure ridges
17 and ice islands are frozen into the polar pack and
18 your momentum is just tremendous and so these things
19 are just like little pins sticking out of the bottom
20 of plywood and if you move the plywood, the pins are
21 certainly going to rub into anything you move the
22 plywood over.

23 Yes, I'm just thinking of the
24 analogy, that one would feel that the pin would break,
25 except if the pin were in very soft sediment, it would
26 probably go through it and not break.

27 Figure 11 is a side scan re-
28 cord taken in about 20 meters of water where the level
29 of scouring --

30 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me,

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 Dr. Shearer. You say it would be like a pin to the bottom of a
2 piece of plywood. I know you're just using a rough
3 analogy but I should have thought it would be more like
4 like a keel. I thought the action would be sort of
5 along and not sort of down.

6 A Oh. O.K. I meant a
7 pin in the plywood being moved sideways rather than
8 being pushed downwards, I'm sorry, yes.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I
10 don't know if we're any further ahead.

11 A No, well, I was trying to
12 make the analogy of, if you have something somewhat
13 ridged sticking through a very massive -- the polar
14 pack is very massive and these things are frozen into
15 it so when the polar pack is blown by wind, if one of
16 the solid pieces of say blue ice from an ice island
17 hits the bottom, it's just -- it has the whole momentum
18 of the polar pack behind it so that it would just sort
19 of move along the bottom and just plow up the bottom
20 sort of.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh, you
22 mean that the ice island might -- the whole island
23 might be shoved along.

24 A Yes.

25 Q Oh, I see.

26 A It's frozen into the
27 polar pack and when it touches the bottom.

28 Q As the polar pack expands
29 it moves the ice island ahead of it, is that it?

30 A Well, it could be frozen

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 into it. They're floating around in the summertime and
2 then they gradually get frozen into the polar pack. In
3 the wintertime when the polar pack moves into twenty
4 to thirty meters of water, it can't get in past the shorefast
5 ice or there is an open lead there. Now, any piece of
6 ice frozen into it -- not necessarily on the edge of it,
7 but just frozen into it and moving with it, as it moves
8 in say the Beaufort gyre, if it comes into contact with
9 the bottom, it will just plow it like a snowplow.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

11 A Figure eleven is a record
12 taken in about twenty meters of water where the level
13 we feel is, the level of scouring, we feel, is very
14 close to saturation where a fresh scour can be disting-
15 uished from an older one. I'll just point that out.
16 The ship moves along this direction and it tows a small
17 fish behind it that is a side looking sonar. It sends
18 out signals below the ship and progressively sideways
19 and picks up signals from the bottom. This doesn't go
20 into the sub-bottom now, as the seismic does, it just
21 picks up the shape of the bottom. So, as you move along,
22 you send out a signal and wherever you have these long
23 linear features here, we feel are scours into the
24 bottom. The dark part of the scours where we have a
25 signal return, the edge of the scour would be facing
26 the ship and you'd have a strong signal return and the
27 light color is where you have a bank facing away from
28 the signal and no signal return. In this particular
29 record, this scour here is very fresh looking. It's
30 got good contrast between light and dark and you can

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 see the mounds thrown up at the side. So we feel it's
2 very recent and these things -- these mounds haven't
3 subsided or been covered in by -- this is in Mackenzie
4 Bay -- been covered in by recent sediment. Here is a
5 number of older scours which seem to be flat on the
6 bottom and I think they're flat because they've been
7 filled in by sediment for a number of years, just as
8 you would fill in a trough or fill in a river channel.
9 So, we feel this is a very fresh scour although we have
10 no real knowledge of how many years.

11 The next figure, figure twelve,
12 this is the top of figure twelve -- it's not a very
13 good figure, but they're all -- the scours seem very
14 fresh, although they're presumed to be quite old be-
15 cause the record is located east of Mackenzie Canyon
16 some forty miles north of Atkinson Point.

17 Repetitive side scan surveys
18 over the same areas, ranging from shallow to deep
19 waters, should, after a number of years, give an idea
20 of the time frame involved in the addition of scours.
21 In other words, the only way to find out how often this
22 happens is to go back over the exact same area and
23 repeat the surveys and see if there's any additions
24 from one year to the next.

25 Figure 13 and 14 -- we'll just
26 leave it on 13 for a while -- show the aerial dis-
27 tribution of scour frequencies and maximum scour depth
28 for much of the offshore area of the Beaufort Sea.
29 These figures were constructed from original Canadian
30 Geological Survey data by the Arctic Petroleum Operators

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
 In Chief

Association. Figure 13, the one we have here, shows saturation scouring has occurred to depths of forty to fifty meters or 150 feet. The very dark color means that most of the bottom is just covered with scours like the two figures you saw before.

Figure 14 demonstrates that no matter what age, most scours dig into the bottom to ten feet or less. I'll just point that out. Most of the area -- it's sort of limited, the coverage we've got here -- but most of the area is -- the lighter blue colors which would imply that these scours don't dig into the bottom to any ~~extreme~~ extent. I think 95 percent of them are ten feet or less.

O.K., figure 15 would just show that -- what we mean by ten feet or less. This is an ecosounding record over an area in Mackenzie Bay running from about fifty feet of water out to 150 feet and the irregularity in the bottom, we feel, is due to scouring and we don't see any relief there; any scour that's greater than ten feet. In fact, most of them are between five and eight. I feel that the shape of the scours in deeper water is partly due to age. They're older, they've been filled in with sediments so they've got a wider shape and I think it's partly due to ice. You need a larger block of ice to scour in deeper water, therefore, your scours are apparently larger. Or, your scours are really larger.

O.K. I feel that in terms of exploration drilling in the offshore, the variability of climate and irregularity of moving ice and personal

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 human error present more of a problem than the scouring,
2 pingos and offshore permafrost, and this facet will be
3 dealt with later by Allen Milne. The permafrost and
4 associated surface hydrate problems that are encountered
5 in exploration drilling on land will likewise exist
6 offshore and may become a significant problem here. The
7 surface weather conditions might provide the one added
8 complicating factor that could push the operation beyond
9 the critical point.

10 The wellhead is planned to be
11 buried in a silo, below the level of maximum scouring
12 for the given area, so that when completed, it will be
13 out of danger.

14 Now, depending upon the method
15 of production of oil and gas, a number of problems may
16 exist.

17 If one assumes that initial
18 processing of either oil and gas must take place on-
19 shore, then the presence of flowlines is the first
20 requisite. As mentioned previously, in evidence pre-
21 sented entitled "A Possible Future Scenario for Petro-
22 leum Development", these flowlines must be buried so
23 as to avoid contact with floating ice. Depending upon
24 where the first discoveries are made, subsequent de-
25 tailed work on the shortest flowline, and perhaps a
26 natural channel to shore, it may be only necessary to
27 bury some parts of the line to ten feet or so, with
28 other sections in water depths greater than 180 feet
29 just laid on the surface.

30 Could we go back to figure 13,

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 I guess. I just want to show scouring in these channels.
2 This is the scouring frequency which we saw in the
3 bottom and I showed you before. The old East Channel,
4 which ran out here, the East Channel which we thought
5 ran offshore during a post-glacial -- when the sea
6 level was lower; the East Channel ran out here, well, as
7 a channel running out here means a slight depression
8 so that offshore now bathymetrically there's sort of a
9 -- well it's the shape of a river channel only it's
10 covered by the sea and we see evidence here that the
11 amount of scouring has decreased significantly in the
12 area of this channel. You would expect that floating
13 ice would come along here and if it cleared the ridge
14 to get into the channel, it wouldn't touch the bottom,
15 because the channel's deeper. So that depending upon
16 where discoveries are made offshore, one might be able
17 to use these channels as a way to get in and not have
18 to bury the lines so deeply.

19 This potential burial leads
20 to the next problem of offshore permafrost and its
21 potential destruction from a hot flowline.

22 The flowlines must be kept
23 hot so that "slug flow" and higher viscosity does not
24 form in the gas and oil respectively.

25 Again, depending upon where
26 discoveries are made, and after detailed surveying
27 of the most likely route to shore, it may be found that
28 very little frozen ground exists along the chosen route.
29 If, in fact, it was found that burial must take place
30 in a zone where frozen ground exists, it would be

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 necessary to insulate the hot wire flowline from this by
2 having a refrigeration coil on the outside.

3 If frozen ground can be avoided,
4 by an offshore, hot flowline, what actual effect will
5 this hot line have on unfrozen sediments? Likewise,
6 if it's possible to process the gas subsea in deeper
7 water, say -180 feet -- in other words the gas would --
8 we could process it and chill it -- what effect of the
9 gas line on these unfrozen yet below zero temperature
10 sediments would occur? I feel that this is a pretty
11 unlikely thing to happen, is processing at subsea in
12 180 feet of water, although they're doing it in -- well
13 no, they're not actually processing it in the Gulf of
14 Mexico. They just got subsea hook-ups.

15 An alternative to shipping oil
16 to the south by pipeline down the Mackenzie to use
17 tankers and/or submarines. This is thought to be quite
18 difficult because of the severe weather conditions in
19 the area. Nevertheless, if this mode of transportation
20 is chosen, it would necessitate more detailed bathymetric
21 surveys to locate all the subsea pingos that exist off-
22 shore. The "Manhattan", on its voyage through the
23 Beaufort Sea, missed, by one nautical mile, totally by
24 accident, a subsea pingo on which it would have run
25 aground. This was found to be the case after two years
26 of somewhat intensive sounding surveys. But even so,
27 some of the line spacing for these, during this ^{detailed} survey
28 was wide enough to miss completely one of these bottom
29 features. At this point, one does not know how many
30 have been missed, nor in fact if any have.

Milne, Lewis, Shearer
In Chief

1 That concludes the presentation
2 and the basis for the information presented here was
3 research carried out under the auspices of the Geological
4 Survey of Canada.

5 MR GOUDGE: I wonder, sir if
6 we might break for coffee. I think Dr. Lewis has some
7 slides to set up that might be helpful.

8 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

9
10 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 11 A.M.)
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 11:20 A.M.)

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner

I propose now to ask Mr. Lewis to go through his evidence before the Commission and I'd like to suggest when we come to the cross-examination, because of a meeting that Mr. Milne has in Yellowknife tomorrow that counsel consider the possibility of cross-examining the witnesses in turn so that Mr. Milne may possibly be able to catch his airplane tonight,

MR. COMMISSIONER: Well I'm

sure that's no problem.

MR. BAYLY:

Q Mr. Lewis, if we could turn to your evidence please, and you could give that to the Commission.

WITNESS LEWIS: Yes. I'll be

talking today on the physical aspects of the Beaufort Sea coast, and in particular those aspects which might be important in any plan to develop hydrocarbon resources offshore. In the development I include both constructional and operational requirements, for example pipelines coming ashore, harbour development, staging facilities and the coarse aggregate mining necessary for their construction, and because any pipeline from offshore will probably need to move some oil or at least some liquids, oil and/or water as well as gas, the consequences of an oil spill from a broken pipeline is also relevant.

For the purposes of my discussion this morning I have defined the coastal zone as the area between the highest storm tideline on land which is about ten feet above mean sea level and the thirty foot water

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 depth, which is generally assumed by most people who
2 study coasts to be the seaward limit of bottom material
3 movement by waves.

4 I think the effects of develop-
5 ment in the coastal zone are of particular importance be-
6 cause it contains large bird and fish populations and
7 because it is part of the Beaufort Sea coast-- of the
8 Beaufort Sea, excuse me, the most used by man at the pre-
9 sent time.

10 If I could have the first slide
11 please. This map will be coming up several times during
12 my discussion, but for the moment I just intended to show
13 the area that I'm going to talk about. It's the length
14 of coast with which I am personally familiar and it ex-
15 tends from the Alaskan border which is basically the black
16 A on the left hand side of the slide, through to Cape
17 Dalhousie which is the K' on the right hand side of the
18 slide. So I'll be considering coastal features along at
19 the entire area from A to K; and the topics I intend to
20 cover include the effects of an Arctic environment on the
21 coast and on coastal processes, near shore water circulat-
22 ion, storm surges, coastal land forms and materials and
23 the coastal stability, all in the context of the influence
24 they should have on the type, extent and location of facil-
25 ities associated with hydrocarbon resource development.

26 So first to the effects of an
27 Arctic environment on coastal processes. I think it's
28 important to realize that the Beaufort Sea is in some
29 senses not true Arctic in nature. The open water season,
30 particularly where the influence of the Mackenzie River

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 is felt, is very long by Arctic standards. So for three
2 to four months a year there can be tens or even hundreds
3 of miles of open water on which wind can generate waves,
4 to cut back the coast. But on the other hand the response
5 of the coastal materials to the attack by these waves is
6 in most respects true Arctic in nature, and I mean that in
7 the sense that frozen ground plays a very important role
8 in the coastal zone. Unlike areas such as the Canadian
9 west coast, coastal materials along the Beaufort Sea are
10 unconsolidated. No bedrock is present, but because if this
11 unconsolidated material is permanently frozen and contains
12 considerable amounts of ground ice in many locations, both
13 the nature and rates of coastal change differ considerably
14 from what they might be in a more temperate climatic set-
15 ting. The net effect of all this is quite complex, because
16 of the long open water season and the unconsolidated nat-
17 ure of the materials, the entire coastline is retreating,
18 however the rate of retreat is controlled to a large ex-
19 tent by the nature, amount and location of ground ice in
20 the sediments. Where the coast is composed of coarse sands
21 and gravels the frozen nature of the materials may slow
22 down wave or ocean, but where large amounts of ground ice
23 are present the retreat will be even more rapid than if
24 the materials were unfrozen in the first place.

25 From the development point of
26 view, these factors are critical. The facilities which
27 might be built must contend both with an active summer
28 marine environment and with the presence of frozen ground,
29 a situation for which there is no parallel in past hydro-
30 carbon development.

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 Nearshore water movement next.

2 The patterns of water movement in the coastal zone are
3 quite different from the offshore circulation which will
4 be discussed by Mr. Milne. As you will see however, they
5 are very relevant to the effect an oil spill might have
6 on the coast. Because the Beaufort Sea coast has been con-
7 ditioned by the relatively rapid erosion and redistribut-
8 ion of the materials of which it is composed, the position
9 and orientation of resultant depositional features like
10 this spit just north of Tuk, can be used to infer the dom-
11 inant direction of sediment movement and thus the dominant
12 longshore current direction at any location where they are
13 present. In this case, because of the nature of this feat-
14 ure we can tell that sediment is moving down the coast
15 from the left hand side of the slide toward the lower right
16 hand side of the slide, simply by the way the feature has
17 extended itself out from the coast, and that implies in
18 turn that the dominant nearshore currents move in the same
19 direction. Please note I used the term "dominant direction."
20 I don't mean to imply that this is the only direction in
21 which currents thicken flow. That is a function of wind
22 direction for example as well. But it is probable that the
23 dominant directions are those in which oil would move
24 during major sediment transport events, that is to say
25 during summer and fall storms, when low lying areas could
26 be flooded by the sea level rises associated with strong
27 onshore winds and thus would be open to inundation by any
28 oil which was in the water.

29 Here's our map again. I plotted
30 dominant current directions for the Beaufort Sea coast

1 on this map as black arrows, which unfortunately probably
2 for most of you it's hard to see the points and therefore
3 the direction. But on the basis of these directions I've
4 divided the coast into segments. Each segment consists of
5 a sediment sink toward which material is being moved and
6 the contributing source area. The segment boundaries are
7 indicated by the yellow lines on the map and each segment--
8 there are eleven in total is labeled by the black letters
9 on yellow backgrounds. So we have along the Beaufort Sea
10 coast a number of segments, within which sediment moves.

11 MR. GOUDGE: Mr. Lewis I can't
12 see the arrows and I don't know whether others can either
13 though. I wonder if you'd mind going to the screen and
14 could you just point it out.

15 WITNESS MILNE: My pencil's
16 moving in the direction of the arrows.

17 MR. GOUDGE: I see.
18 WITNESS MILNE: The
19 general transport comes up through here and then here
20 down to there, back into here in the sink and then the
21 sink, transport there and transport there. I think the
22 main feature is this movement up over here.

23 WITNESS LEWIS: I think the
24 important point I want to make here is not what direction
25 the arrows go. It's that the coast is composed of a number
26 of segments and that particularly during storm events, oil
27 reaching the nearshore zone will tend to stay within the
28 segment where it first comes into shore, rather than to
29 move between segments and all along the coast and that
30 when it does come into a segment that it will tend to
move toward the sediment sink of that segment.

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 It might appear attractive then
2 to locate shore installations having a high potential
3 for oil spillage in the sink areas because if you spilled
4 the oil it would perhaps tend to stay there. Unfortunately
5 sediment also likes to move into the sink areas and that
6 means that they are usually very shallow and they contain
7 major spits and lagoons that are favorite locations for
8 fish and shore bird populations.

9 I've mentioned sea level rises
10 already, associated with strong onshore winds during summer
11 and fall storms. These rises are sometimes called storm
12 surges. Based on an examination of tide gauge records at
13 Tuk, Dr. R.F. Henry of Ocean and Aquatic Affairs, D.OE.
14 identified 22 surges which caused water level rises of
15 more than 3 feet in between 1962 and 1973, including two
16 of which caused rises of more than 6 feet, that is a rise
17 of more than 6 feet above mean sea level. A September
18 1970 storm, for which no tide gauge data is available may
19 have caused a rise of as much as 10 feet at Tuk. These
20 surges are of importance for several reasons. First they
21 occur during storms and they are associated with waves and
22 these waves cause much of the erosion and longshore sed-
23 iment movement which occurs along the Beaufort Sea coast.
24 I'll discuss this topic in somewhat more detail later.
25 And second, they lead to the inundation of low lying coastal
26 areas by sea water, the water which might contain oil in
27 the event of a spill.

28 This slide is a view of a major
29 spit at Kay Point. It's about three miles long and its
30 crest is about three feet above normal mean sea level.

1 This picture was taken in June of 1975 . The next slide
2 is identical to this slide. It's taken with the same
3 camera, from the same position during a minor storm surge
4 along the Beaufort Sea coast. So here we have normal and
5 during a small storm surge, same picture. So as you can
6 see they can be inundated by a surge and you can see the
7 waves.

Perhaps of even more importance because they are of greater area extent than these spits bars and beaches are the low lying delta areas of the Beaufort Sea coast, which are all major wild fowl nesting and staging areas and which also could be inundated by a storm surge and by oil or other pollutants contained in the water. Driftwood lines on the Mackenzie Delta indicate that much of the outer delta could be inundated by an extreme surge to as far south as the lower green line on this slide which is the one with the figure 3 right above Mackenzie Delta. This is a line which represents the location where the channel banks, that is the highest parts of the delta plain are lower than three meters. North of that line the height of the channel banks is less than three meters or ten feet approximately. South of that line greater than ten feet.

24 The area then which is subject
25 to storm surge inundation on the delta is almost 1500
26 square miles, which if it were square it would have sides
27 about 40 miles long. So you've got a 40 mile by 40 mile
28 area basically, which is subject to inundation by storm
29 surges, and about 20 percent of that 1500 square miles
30 is covered by shallow lakes in which pollutants could be

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 dropped and of this lake area about 30 percent or 86
2 square miles is connected by channels which eventually
3 reach the sea.

4 THE COMMISSIONER: You're
5 speaking still of the lower delta, north of the drift-
6 wood line ?

7 A Yes I am . So into this
8 latter type of lake I've talked about, that's a lake which
9 is connected by channels-- the pollutants could be carried
10 into this type of lake even by surges which were not high
11 enough to flood the delta surface. So we have a very large
12 area which is subject to inundation by storm surges. Now
13 exactly how far up the delta sea water might penetrate
14 during a surge is dependent upon the influence of river
15 flow as well as upon surge flooding, and to my knowledge,
16 no research has been undertaken into water circulation
17 patterns over flooded areas of the delta. But Dr. Henry's
18 storm surge studies suggest the possibility that sea
19 water and associated pollutants might be drawn in on the
20 Shallow Bay side and river water diverted out East Channel.
21 So although you can flood an area-- the area I talked about,
22 we don't know exactly what part of that flooded area is
23 covered by river water and what part is covered by sea
24 water. That's the point I'm trying to make there, and if
25 we assume that the oil is associated with sea water, that's
26 an important question.

27 Let's move now to a discussion
28 of the major land form types found along the Beaufort
29 Sea coast and of the importance of their nature to devel-
30 opment. To within each of the coastal segments I have

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 identified, one or more of the following types of land
2 forms dominate the coast. First steep cliffs, often with
3 large amounts of ground ice in them and fronted by
4 narrow beaches; second, thermokarst lakes breached by
5 coastal erosion; third, spits and barriers up to eight
6 miles in length and several hundred yards wide and lastly,
7 river deltas, particularly that of the Mackenzie which is
8 one of the largest deltas in the world.

9 So first the coastal cliffs. Of
10 these four types of landform coastal cliffs occupy the
11 largest portion of the shoreline in all coastal segments,
12 except for the modern Mackenzie Delta which is segment
13 E there and the eastern end of the Tuk peninsula which
14 sections J and K.

15 High and steep cliffs are more
16 common along the Yukon coast than along the lower lying
17 Tuk Peninsula, where a relatively small offshore gradient
18 decreases the effectiveness of wave erosion.

19 The cliff form is largely a
20 function of the materials of which it is composed. Gravel
21 and sand dominate along the Yukon shoreline but layers of
22 silt and clay are common. The gravel is also common along
23 the Tuk Peninsula, west of Tuk but sands and silts prevail
24 to the east. This is a view of the sand bluffs at the
25 mouth of East Channel.

26 Where the material is coarse, the
27 cliffs tend to be steep but not vertical, like this
28 cliff at Tuk, for example. This is the cliff in front
29 of Tuk itself. They may even be vegetated like this one
30 near Shingle Point on the Yukon coast, but where the

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 material is fine grained on the other hand the cliffs tend
2 to be vertical like this one near Kay Point, and if the
3 fine-grained material contains large thicknesses of massive
4 ground ice, ground ice slumps like this one just west of
5 Tuk, or this one at Kay Point, will develop. The banded
6 material in the centre of this slide is almost pure ice.

7 These cliffed areas may seem
8 desirable as locations for harbours, staging areas etc.
9 because their tops are well above storm surge levels, water
10 depths offshore from them are usually relatively deep, and
11 if the cliff material is coarse, a suitable source of
12 construction material is close at hand.

13 But the nature of the cliff
14 material is critical. The most ideal location for a deep
15 water port along the southern Beaufort Sea coast might seem
16 to be in the area of Babbage Bight just east of Kay Point
17 because water depths close to shore are deep. The cliffs
18 in this area however are fine-grained and contain consider-
19 able massive ice. The vertical bluffs and ground ice slumps
20 like this one predominate, and I think it's hardly an
21 ideal location for the land facilities associated with a
22 harbour, so you have a problem.

23 The presence of frozen ground and
24 massive ice is also relevant to any pipelines which might
25 come ashore in cliffed areas. In areas like this one
26 near Kay Point massive ice bodies extend below sea level
27 and out under the shallow water near shore. Wave erosion
28 during the August 1975 storm that I showed you the slide
29 of Kay Spit, cut a niche in the base of this cliff
30 and exposed the ground ice behind it. It's hard to see

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 here in the light, but at the back of the niche there's a
2 continuous white ice area, and this incidentally, is
3 exactly the situation which exists along the cliffs in
4 front of Tuk and it's the major reason why it will be so
5 difficult to stabilize the cliffs at Tuk, and a hot oil
6 pipeline coming in onshore under this kind of condition,
7 I think would be subject to failure.

8 The second type of coastal land
9 form I'd like to talk about are thermokarst lakes. In
10 addition to the coastal cliff areas there is a second type
11 of coastline in the Beaufort Sea which is basically eros-
12 ional in nature.

13 This photomosaic is typical of
14 large parts of the coast along the Tuk Peninsula, partic-
15 ularly east of McKinley Bay.

16 At first glance the coastline
17 appears drowned, but in fact its outline reflects the
18 breaching by coastal erosion of the lakes which cover much
19 of the Peninsula. These lakes are commonly thermokarst in
20 origin and they result from ponding and differential melt-
21 ing of excess ice in the sands and silts which form their
22 boundaries.

23 The breaching usually leads to
24 at least partial draining of the lakes and, if this drop
25 in water level is sufficient to enable the lake to freeze
26 to the bottom in winter, to the formation of pingos, two
27 of which are marked on the slide here. This two-pingo
28 lake is about three feet deep.

29 As coastal erosion continues, the
30 former lake area is deepened, partly because of wave act-

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 ion and partly because of continued melting of excess ice
2 in the sediments. The area between the barrier bar and the
3 two -pingo lake on this slide is flatbottomed and about
4 ten feet deep, brought low frequency echo sounding shows
5 and irregular sub-bottom , generally less than 13 feet
6 beneath the present bottom. This sub-bottom may represent
7 the boundary between a recent wave-deposited sediments and
8 the older and perhaps still frozen coastal plain sediments
9 underneath.

10 In any case, a newly breached
11 lake provides an excellent trap for an oil spill. Oil
12 could be carried into the lake during normal flood tides
13 or storm surges. Granted it might be pulled out again by
14 ebb tidal currents but unfortunately, the eastern end of
15 the Tuk Peninsula, where breached lakes are most numerous
16 is also the only coastal segment except for the river
17 deltas, which contains extensive tidal flats. This slide
18 shows exposed tidal flats in and near the two-pingo
19 lake of the last photograph. The two-pingo lake is in
20 the background here of this slide.

21 Let's turn next to the deposition-
22 al features found along the Beaufort Sea coast.

23 Spits, like the ones I have al-
24 ready shown you at Topkak and Kay Points, and barriers
25 like this one at Warren Point on the Tuk Peninsula, front
26 significant portions of most of the coastal segments I
27 have identified. They are particularly extensive near
28 Herschel Island on the Yukon coast, around the old islands
29 -- Pelly, Hooper , Garry etc-- which front the eastern
30 Mackenzie Delta , and from Warren Point east on the Tuk

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 Peninsula. In these areas they reach lengths of more than
2 eight miles and widths in excess of 200 yards, that's
3 above normal sea level.

4 As I have already mentioned, they
5 lie in their entirety, below the highest storm tide line
6 and thus are susceptible, at any time to inundation by oil.
7 As well, the shallow lagoons behind them could function in
8 much the same way as thermokarst^{lakes} and act as traps for oil.

9 The size of the spits and barriers
10 is a function of both offshore gradient and sediment supply.
11 They are largest where offshore water depths are small as
12 they are off the Mackenzie Delta and the Tuk Peninsula, or
13 where the supply of sediment is large as it is in the
14 Herschel Island area where material from the Firth and
15 Malcolm Rivers is added to that supply by cliff erosion.

16 Their height and cross-sectional
17 form, on the other hand, are at least partially dependent
18 on sediment size. The sandy gravel spits and barriers of
19 the Yukon coast and west of Tuk on the Tuk Peninsula tend
20 to be higher and narrower than the pure sand features east
21 of Tuk. This is a portion of Nunaluk spit near Herschel
22 Island which rises over seven feet above normal sea level,
23 whereas this sand spit at Atkinson Point on the Tuk
24 Peninsula reaches a maximum elevation of less than three
25 feet.

26 The gravel in coastal beaches,
27 spits and bars and their easy accessibility from the sea
28 makes them attractive sources for borrow materials. They
29 are not thick, however. Both drilling and low-frequency
30 sub-bottom echo sounding suggest that significant gravel

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 deposits seldom extend more than 15-20 feet below the
2 surface, either on land or in the nearshore water area.

3 And the last land form type, the
4 river deltas--

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me,
6 Dr. Lewis, just a point of terminology. Every -- a lot of
7 witnesses have talked about spits and barriers and barrier
8 beaches. What do you mean by "barrier " ? You used that
9 expression here, and what do others mean by "barrier beach-
10 es" ?

11 A Well--

12 Q I mean I know what a spit is
13 and I know what a beach is but--

14 A -- a barrier is simply a
15 spit that's not connected to the land, basically. If you
16 take a spit and chop a hole at its upper end and let the
17 water through, it becomes a barrier. From a practical
point of view there's no real difference.

18 Q There's no what?

19 A No real difference.

20 Q Yeah, right.

21 A They're basically the same
22 features. The barrier beaches-- well this is just a
23 scientific jargon thing that nobody agrees about, so there's
24 really not much sense me telling you what I think, because
someone else will tell you something different.

25 Q Let's forget it then.

26 A I think the important thing
27 really is they are low-lying features and they're formed
28 basically in the same way, so we can call them the same
29 thing, or probably should be calling them the same thing.

30

29 Now outer delta sediments are
30 rich in organic material; in decayed vegetation remains.

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 This scarp, for example, at the front of the delta is
2 largely organic in nature, but this richness is only
3 relative. On deltas in more temperate climates, lakes are
4 a very short-lived feature of delta plains. They are very
5 quickly infilled by plant debris. This rapid infilling does
6 not occur in the Arctic. So you have, relatively here a
7 large amount of organic material but say compared to the
8 Mississippi Delta you don't have very much at all.

9 Frozen ground also plays an im-
10 portant role in lake formation and lake evolution. The
11 most significant aspect of this role may be in the effect
12 of freezing on the natural consolidation or settlement of
13 delta sediments under their own weight.

14 The argument I am about to make is
15 pure speculation. It is not based on hard data but I will
16 present it because of the implications it might have for
17 development on the delta surface and for a pipeline across
18 Shallow Bay.

19 A delta is a product , not only
20 of the balance between the river and the sea but also of
21 the balance between a river deposition and subsidence. On
22 the Mississippi Delta, buried deposits, which were above
23 sea level less than 500 years ago, are now as much as 65
24 feet below sea level, solely because of sediment consoli-
25 dation under its own weight. There's been no change in
26 sea level over the last 500 years. Larger scale tectonic
27 processes are too slow in this time period to account for
28 anything like this amount of subsidence. Unlike the
29 Mississippi Delta though, on the Mackenzie Delta, the
30 ground begins to freeze as areas are built up to near sea

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 level, as Mr. Shearer has already talked about. Natural
2 consolidation will be stopped at the point in time at
3 which the sediment freezes. If permafrost aggradation is
4 rapid, the frozen sediments at depth will be under-consol-
5 idated with respect to the weight of the material over them.
6 Added to this is the continuing addition of new weight in
7 the form of deposition on top of the delta plain. Now if
8 this frozen ground is thawed for any reason, natural or
9 otherwise, consolidation can begin again. On the outer
10 delta plain, numerous lakes appear to have formed in areas
11 of low-centered ice-wedge polygons, possibly because of
12 water ponding, in the polygon areas, subsequent permafrost
13 degradation and consolidation.

14 The bottoms of most lakes on the
15 outer delta are above sea level; that is above normal sea
16 level, at the present time. But in the Aklavik area, a
17 much older and higher part of the delta, lakes whose bot-
18 toms are below present sea level have been recorded. That
19 this could occur in spite of infilling during river floods
20 and deposition of organic debris, may indicate continuing
21 consolidation of the unfrozen sediments beneath the lakes.

22 Even in the absence of excess ice
23 then-- and there is little in the sediments of the outer
24 delta plain--thaw consolidation remains an important prob-
25 lem. I am curious as to what effect natural consolidation
26 might have on a pipeline across Shallow Bay-- an area
27 which because of the presence of frozen ground at depth
28 beneath it, may be a subsiding older part of the Mackenzie
29 Delta plain. If the rates are in the range of those found
30 in the Mississippi/^{Delta} and I would guess that they wouldn't be

1 as high as you'd find in the Mississippi Delta, because
2 so much of the material in the Mississippi Delta is organ-
3 ic and it can compress a lot more, but if they were, con-
4 solidation of anywhere from 1.5 to 4 feet could occur in
5 the bottom of Shallow Bay over a 30-year period. Well the
6 problem, if that should occur, is not the absolute fact
7 of 4 feet of subsidence underneath Shallow Bay. It's the
8 fact that the pipeline is coming off frozen parts of the
9 delta which are not subsiding so you have differential
10 subsidence; part of it's going down and part of it isn't.

11 Now, as I say this is speculation.
12 I have no data on it, I know of no other data on it. I think
13 it's a problem which should be looked at.

14 Elsewhere along the Beaufort Sea
15 coast, that is outside of the Mackenzie Delta, deltas only
16 occupy a small proportion of the coastal zone. There are
17 none at all on the Tuk Peninsula, although the Peninsula
18 itself is composed largely of material deposited in an
19 old Mackenzie Delta.

20 Along the Yukon coast, the deltas
21 of the Blow and Babbage Rivers are similiar in form and
22 sediment composition to the Mackenzie but are much smaller.
23 The Blow Delta plain covers only 31 square miles and the
24 Babbage 15 square miles. This is in contrast to the Mac-
25 kenzie's 8000 square miles. This slide looks north over
26 the Blow Delta plain toward the Beaufort Sea.

27 Unlike the Mackenzie, however,
28 both the Blow and Babbage Delta plains can be covered in
29 their entirety by storm surges, not just to the outer
30 part of the delta plain, but the whole delta plain can be

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 covered during storm surges. This is a view of the Babbage
2 Delta during spring flooding and the entire delta plain is
3 covered by water. This kind of flooding could be repeated
4 at any time during the summer by a storm surge.

5 The relatively steep, gravelly
6 fan deltas of the Firth and Malcolm Rivers, on the other
7 hand, do not flood significantly during storm surges, and
8 thus are not as vulnerable to the effects of an oil spill.
9 They also do not contain the low, fine-grained, frozen all-
10 uval flats I mentioned earlier and would not be subject
11 to significant thaw consolidation. This view of the Firth
12 Delta show the aufeis deposits already much discussed in
13 these hearings. Possible borrow pit operations on these
14 deltas have also been covered in earlier testimony by me
15 and by other people.

16 I've left until the end any de-
17 tailed discussion of the nature and rates of change of the
18 land forms of the Beaufort Sea coast, because I think
19 coastal stability is the single most important factor in
20 relation to possible development activities.

21 Under the influence of wave action,
22 particularly during storm surges, the coastal cliffs with-
23 in each coastal segment I have identified are being cut
24 back and the material moved along shore and deposited
25 either in the form of depositional features; spits and
26 bars , in the case of coarse sediment or offshore in the
27 case of finer sediment. The coastline is thus a very
28 dynamic environment and, if the design of onshore instal-
29 lations or pipelines from offshore doesn't take this into
30 account, they'll eventually fail. I'm not suggesting that

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 it won't be taken into account.

2 Cliff retreat is most rapid where
3 offshore gradients are steep and where the cliff sediments
4 contain considerable pore, wedge, or massive ice. Photo-
5 grammetric measurements show that this undercut bluff at
6 Kay Point retreated almost 300 feet between 1952 and 1970.
7 Retreat of 25-150 feet over the same period occurred along
8 most of Babbage Bight, east of Kay Point, and other zones
9 of rapid cliff retreat include the Herschel Island area,
10 the old islands which front the Mackenzie Delta and the
11 the Tuk settlement area.

12 The way in which retreat occurs
13 is unique to an Arctic environment and, as I have said, is
14 largely a function of features related to frozen ground.
15 The headwalls of the ground ice slumps I showed you earl-
16 ier are very rapidly receding. We have measured over 30
17 feet of retreat in a single year on one, and in other areas
18 undercutting by waves and melting along ice wedge cracks
19 can cause entire polygon blocks to collapse into the sea.
20 This view was taken near Kay Point this past summer, and
21 this is a close-up of the fracture zone at the back of the
22 slumped blocks I showed you in the last slide, showing
23 the exposed wedge ice.

24 The implications for development
25 of these rates of retreat and of the way in which it occurs
26 must be obvious. I should add only that the rates of re-
27 treat are not constant, either seasonally or annually.
28 Most retreat occurs during storm surges; 45 feet of land
29 was lost near the R.C.M.P. station at Tuk during the major
30 1970 storm, almost one-quarter of the total retreat be-

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 tween 1950 and 1972.

2 It will be tempting to obtain
3 sand and gravel for construction purposed from the coast-
4 al beaches, bars and spits where continued coarse sediment
5 movement from cliff retreat promises rapidly replenished
6 supplies of high quality aggregate. Spits have extended
7 as much as 2300 feet in length between 1952 and 1970.
8 That figure is for Nunaluk Spit.

9 In addition however to the biol-
10 ogical consequences that may make extraction of this gravel
11 unsuitable, there are a number of things which should be
12 known before permits to mine gravel are granted.

13 Material supplied to the beaches,
14 bars and spits is in continuous movement along the shore.
15 Extracting gravel will tend to accelerate nearby shore
16 erosion, particularly in the downdrift direction, and the
17 effects of this must be determined. For example, if sand
18 were taken from the beaches north of Tuk, the supply to
19 the beach which fronts the townsite would be interrupted
20 and the coastal cliff there would retreat even more rapidly
21 than it already is. A permanently dredged deep channel into
22 Tuk Harbour would have the same effect unless the dredged
23 material was pumped out downdrift from the channel so it
24 could continue its movement along the coast to end up in
25 the beaches in front of Tuk, and to protect the Tuk Cliff.

26 The sources of material in the
27 beaches is primarily local in nature. Little coarse sedi-
28 ment will move between the coastal segments I have identi-
29 fied. In some segments, the spits and bars may be relic in
30 nature and material, once removed will not be replaced.

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 For example, Avadlek spit on Herschel Island was formed from
2 sands and gravels supplied by deposits on the north and
3 west sides of the island, deposits which no longer exist
4 because of cliff retreat.

5 The dynamic nature of beaches,
6 spits and bars is also relevant to the effect oil from
7 a spill might have on them. During the small August 1975
8 storm surge I showed you, the beach surface along the spit
9 at Kay Point was cut down by as much as a foot and later
10 reburied by almost the same amount of sand and gravel.
11 Thus oil which was dropped on these features could be
12 buried at any time.

13 Now, in direct contrast to the
14 coastal cliffs and to the beaches, spits and bars, the
15 delta plains of the Beaufort Sea coast, including that of
16 the Mackenzie are remarkably stable in nature.

17 Examination of aerial photograph
18 sites spaced over a 22-year period, revealed little shore
19 line advance along the front of the Mackenzie Delta and no
20 evidence of major channel shifts on the outer delta plain.
21 In fact, as this area of the delta shoreline shows, many
22 areas have undergone minor retreat. You can see the wave
23 cut scarp here.

24 The rate of advance of a delta
25 plain is dependent to a great extent on the balance be-
26 tween river and wave forces. Wave power at the shoreline,
27 in turn, is dependent upon deep water wave conditions and
28 / ^{on} the offshore gradient. Because the Beaufort Sea is frozen
29 for much of the year and because the offshore gradient of
30 the Mackenzie Delta is one of the flattest of any major

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 river delta in the world, we might expect that the total
2 annual wave power exerted in the deltaic coastal zone would
3 be very low in comparison with the other major river deltas
4 in more temperate climates.

5 Under these conditions, you would
6 expect that the Mackenzie Delta would be advancing rapidly,
7 but it isn't, and the only explanation is that river power
8 is also low and now that the river has filled the protect-
9 ed trough between the Caribou Hills and the Richardson
10 Mountains, it is not powerful enough to overcome the--
11 low as it is-- the erosive wave energy of the open Beau-
12 fort Sea.

13 The lack of major channel shift-
14 ing on the outer delta plain, may also be related to low
15 river power. This effect is accentuated by the number of
16 channels which discharge into the Beaufort Sea. There are
17 almost 60 with a total width of over 50 miles. This divis-
18 ion of a given amount of river power leaves no single chan-
19 nel with enough energy to actively erode its banks, part-
20 icularly since they are frozen and therefore more resistant
21 to erosion.

22 This horizontal stability is,
23 in itself, a simplifying factor for possible facilities
24 associated with hydrocarbon development. From this point
25 of view only, the construction which would be unfeasible
26 on most other river deltas of the world may be possible
27 on the Mackenzie. There are , of course, other points of
28 view, some of which I have discussed , which make the delta
29 less attractive than these horizontal stability conditions
30 alone might suggest.

The last aspect of the coastal change I'd like to talk about is the direct effect of sea ice on the coastal zone and on the resultant need for careful selection of locations for the construction of nearshore facilities, such as wharfs and jetties, and I think this can probably best be done with a slide and a question. How would you like to be a wharf or a jetty in the path of this 30 foot high shoreline pressure ridge? This is at Shingle Point.

Shore installations must be carefully located so as to avoid large areas where large amounts of ground ice are present. A disturbance of the existing thermal regime will serve only to accelerate already rapid rates of coastal retreat. Beach material is primarily local in origin and its removal will lead to increased coastal erosion. As a general principle, therefore, I would recommend that beaches not be considered as sources of construction material. Now I say this just as a general principal, meaning that if permits are ever allowed, that it be required that the downstream-- downdrift and updrift changes caused by removal of that gravel be carefully considered in advance. As I mentioned if you take material off the beaches north of Tuk you're going to effect Tuk and people had better be aware of that.

30 There are generally few good

8 The hazards of liquid pollutant
9 spills from shore operations could be minimized if these
0 activities take place in bays or lagoons behind spits or
1 barrier bars, and deltas are among the most complex active
2 environments in the world because of the interaction be-
3 tween river and sea forces. The effects of an Arctic en-
4 vironment must be added to normal deltaic processes on
5 the Mackenzie Delta and these effects are not well under-
6 stood. Because of this great complexity and because the
7 Mackenzie Delta is a unique North American environment, I
8 would recommend that the development on it be kept to a
9 minimum. Now I don't mean to say necessarily zero, but I
0 think it's an area to avoid if it's possible to do it any
1 other way.

28 The largest areas subject to
29 frequent inundation by sea water and thus potentially, by
30 oil contained in that water are the river deltas, particu-

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 larly the Mackenzie. Thermal disturbance through vegetation
2 damage could lead to thaw consolidation, even in the
3 absence of excess ice. Other susceptible coastal features
4 are beaches, spits and barriers and the breached thermo-
5 karst lakes. Thank you.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll
7 adjourn 'till two o'clock and then we'll hear from Dr.
8 Milne. Is that--

9 MR. BAYLY: It's up to you sir.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, what
11 would you suggest ?

12 MR. BAYLY: I was just wonder-
13 ing-- perhaps Mr. Milne could briefly outline the Beau-
14 fort Sea project. It would just take about ten minutes.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh what
16 time is it now ?

17 MR. BAYLY: 12:15

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh sure,
19 let's do that.

20 WITNESS MILNE: All right,
21 what I'll do is outline what the Beaufort Sea project--
22 it's objectives are, and a few points on what is it all
23 about. The major objectives are really to be able to put
24 ourselves in a better position; that is Canada in a better
25 position, to answer a number of questions about offshore
26 exploratory drilling in the Beaufort Sea and the sort of
27 questions go like this: What is at threat from offshore
28 exploratory drilling? The biological panel the other
29 day described some to the wildlife that was at threat.
30 These are examples and Peter Lewis has described shoreline

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 processes, which would be a threat. Secondly, what threats
2 does the marine environment pose to offshore exploratory
3 drilling ? We need there, to get an understanding of the
4 sea ice as it pertains to the operation of drill ships,
5 how it could threaten their operations. What are the typi-
6 cal weather conditions if such a thing can be described ?
7 What are storm surges like ? are they predictable and so
8 on-- is there any method of predicting all of these envir-
9 onmental features which could be used to advantage by off-
10 shore exploratory drilling systems. Thirdly, how would
11 pollutants be transported from drilling sites and to where ?
12 These involve oceanographic studies, mostly movements of
13 sea ice and ice climatology. How can changes in the marine
14 environment be identified and monitored? Clearly, here
15 we're looking at baseline studies which mean essentially,
16 what is the marine environment like now, in most of its
17 constituents, as many as one can identify, so that in the
18 future, if there is large scale development, could we deter-
19 mine what the effects of that development might be. Finally
20 how can offshore drilling be conducted with a maximum but
21 acceptable risk to the environment, and I think my assess-
22 ment of how one might answer these questions is, we can
23 respond to the questions in terms of , to varying degrees--
24 that is, in some cases the information we have to respond
25 to those questions is fairly shakey, and not very clear,
26 in terms of best guesses. In other cases the information
27 base is quite good, mainly on oceanography and sea ice,
28 On the biological side it tends to be much more uncertain.
29
30 The cost of the project, overall
estimated at about 12 million dollars, and -- which essent-

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 ially covered, partly by, in House, ongoing Government
2 support, people's salaries, overhead, and new funds to the
3 tune of 6 million dollars were plugged into the system
4 over two years, part of which was 4.1 million dollars from
5 the Arctic Petroleum Operators Association, under their
6 APOA project number 72, which was called the Beaufort
7 Sea Environmental Project, by them.

8 I think one of the things that
9 has happened during this project, which is quite important,
10 and that is the direct involvement of industry with gover-
11 nment, which has forced, I believe, industry to pay
12 attention to every aspect of the studies which have been
13 going on, rather than standing to one side and watching
14 the activity and not being too concerned in it. So that
15 has been a great advantage here; that if somebody's watch-
16 ing over you to determine how their money is spent, it has
17 a two way benefit. Also, all these activities regarding
18 government and industry funding and the joint activities
19 came under an industry, government agreement which prescribed
20 that the outcome of the studies, and in a very general
21 way should be available by the end of 1975. It was not
22 very specific on that point. The main purpose of that
23 rather loose deadline was to ensure that there would be
24 some information available so that a drilling authority
25 could be considered for 1976.

26 I think I'd like to stop there
27 unless somebody wants to specifically ask questions which
28 are in their mind.

29 MR. BAYLY: Perhaps, Mr.
30 Commissioner we could break now for lunch, and if we could

Shearer, Lewis, Milne
In Chief

1 start right at two o'clock we could possibly finish the
2 evidence in chief by coffee break.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Well look,
4 why don't we start at--

5 MR. GOUDGE: I would think
6 we'll be able to accomodate Mr. Milne. We can focus our
7 questions on him this afternoon, and I would see no dif-
8 ficulty in--

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, why
10 not start-- it's not even 12:30 yet. Why not start at
11 1:30 ? Let's try to get back at 1:30 and then we can do
12 justice to Dr. Milne's presentation and not have him feel,
13 or any of us feel that we're rushing through it. So let's
14 do that. Let's come back at 1:30.

15 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 12:20 P.M.)
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Milne, if you're ready, perhaps we could begin with your evidence, at the introduction on page 1.

WITNESS MILNE: All right then, I'll begin.

This is the introduction. What I'm going to read is the evidence which is a cut down version of the preliminary environmental assessment, which has been published as the Beaufort Sea project technical report number 39. The introduction as follows.

Drilling for oil using ice-strengthened drill ships is proposed for ice-free periods starting in the summer of 1976 at two sites. These sites are shown at the back of the document in Figure 1, and I think you're all familiar with where they are. These sites are inaccessible during the winter and spring to any existing drilling systems. The scale of activities for 1976 is small, therefore the only real major impact on the environment would result from oil discharged into the sea in the event of an underwater blowout. Although the possibility of a blowout occurring is remote, it cannot be ignored. There is a whole series of possibilities and conditions that will determine the severity of the impact of a blowout on the environment such as:

Whether it is just a gas blowout; if it is gas and oil, and what is the discharge rate of the oil; whether or not it is self-sealing; when

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 during the drilling season the blowout occurs; how long
2 it would run wild before a relief well could shut it
3 off; what kind of oil it is; the probable effectiveness
4 of proposed oilspill countermeasures; where the
5 escaped oil would spread to; how weather conditions,
6 such as storm surges, wind and sea state would affect
7 the spread of oil and the ability to contain oil; once
8 spread to coastal areas and in the sea ice, what its
9 effect would be on organisms; would there be any changes
10 in the climate; how long would it take for wildlife
11 populations to recover; would there be local and possibly
12 international ramifications to depletions of some
13 wildlife species.

14 This testimony is an environmental
15 assessment and assumes the hypothetical worst case oil
16 well blowout in a scenario form, and examines the
17 nature of the transport and fate of oil in the Beaufort
18 Sea.

19 Assuming a "worst-case", and
20 that's purposely put in quotation marks, because one
21 can think of cases that are even worse, sub-sea oil well
22 blowout, major conclusions are as follows:

23 The blowout would run wild for
24 at least one year, until a relief well could bring it
25 under control. Access to either site for relief well
26 drilling in any summer is not guaranteed. Even though
27 a wild well could discharge oil for a year or more into
28 the Beaufort Sea's ice, any premature melting which
29 would be caused would be indistinguishable from natural
30 ice-cover fluctuation, hence no climate changes should

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 be attributed to oil in the volumes expected. Oilspill
2 countermeasures for 1976 --

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me,
4 Dr. Milne, I don't altogether follow that. Premature
5 melting owing to the contact of oil -- owing to a film
6 of oil under the ice?

7 A Owing to the fact that
8 the oil, ^{is black} absorbs the sun more readily, and tends to
9 melt the ice faster.

10 Q Yes, I understand that,
11 but then you say that would be indistinguishable from
12 natural ice cover fluctuation.

13 A Yes, the amount of extra
14 ice that could be melted by oil contamination, that
15 amount would be indistinguishable from the -- or
16 insignificant compared to the natural fluctuations in
17 ice cover in the Beaufort Sea.

18 Q Right. All right, I'm
19 with you.

20 WITNESS MILNE: The wildlife
21 most seriously damaged would be seabirds. It is judged
22 that none of the damage would be irreversible, but that
23 recovery could be as long as a decade in some cases.
24 Except for birds, the economic values of Beaufort Sea
25 wildlife are small compared to oil industry expenditure.
26 The birds are a continental resource with a high
27 indirect economic value. The major values threatened
28 must be judged primarily on sociological and
29 environmental grounds, not economic.

30 So that's the summary of the

1 conclusions. The next heading is exploratory drilling
2 in 1976, and I want to just read out "The Concern".

3 Almost the whole of the
4 Canadian portion of the continental shelf of the
5 Beaufort Sea has been subject to permits by oil
6 companies for a number of years. Seismic and other
7 geophysical surveys have been carried out fairly
8 extensively over the whole area. It is regarded as
9 promising with respect to gas and oil reserves. To
10 date the only drilling which has taken place offshore
11 in the Beaufort Sea has been from artificial islands
12 constructed in shallow water close to the Mackenzie
13 Delta. However, at least some sectors of the industry
14 are now anxious to see exploratory drilling in areas
15 of deeper water farther offshore.

16 The Canadian Marine Drilling
17 Ltd., Canmar, is a subsidiary of Dome Petroleum, and
18 plans to drill two wildcat wells in the southern
19 Beaufort Sea in the summer of 1976. There are two
20 drill ships, and I understand there's a third one,
21 the halvedrill has been purchased in Norway, which
22 could mean three systems might be in the Beaufort Sea
23 by the end of 1976.

24 In the future, an expansion
25 of exploratory drilling, perhaps followed by the
26 drilling of production wells and the laying of pipeline
27 networks will clearly have extensive environmental
28 and sociological implications which will have to be
29 dealt with by appropriate authorities. However, of
30 immediate concern is how the Beaufort Sea environment

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 might be degraded by Canmar's proposed exploratory
2 drilling in 1976. The major immediate concern is the
3 threat of marine underwater oil well blowouts.

4 Three questions arise. What
5 is the probability of a blowout? What are the probable
6 consequences of a blowout? What is the capability to
7 control the blowout and to clean up oil which escapes
8 control? This assessment is mainly concerned with
9 consequences and clean-up, but it also must deal with
10 the nature of ice conditions in the Beaufort Sea as it
11 influences the viability of drill ships' operations,
12 and in particular, their ability to drill a relief
13 well.

14 To date, drilling authorities in
15 the Arctic and elsewhere offshore have been granted
16 where it is possible to extend the drilling season
17 sufficiently long in order to implement measures to
18 control a wild well. However, such precedences
19 cannot be strictly adhered to at the proposed drilling
20 sites. It is evident from the description to follow
21 that if a blowout were to occur in the latter part
22 of the drilling season of 1976, the earliest completion
23 date for a relief well would be toward the end of
24 September, 1977, and there is no assurance that the
25 well would not run wild for yet another year.

26 Drill ship operations on the
27 continental shelf of the Beaufort Sea differ
28 significantly from those in areas explored hitherto.
29 The major difference is the presence of sea ice which
30 would preclude drilling operations from ships for the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 greater part of the year, and in some cases for the
2 whole year. For example, if Canmar had been granted
3 drilling authority for operating with two drill ships
4 starting in the summer of 1973, they could possibly have
5 completed two wells in 1973, would have been able to
6 conduct virtually no drilling in 1974 and could have
7 started two, but at most completed only one, in 1975.
8 If a blowout had occurred in late 1973, and had not
9 been self-sealing, it would not have been possible to
10 start a relief well in 1974. One could have been
11 started in 1975, but it is not certain that it would
12 have been possible to complete it.

13 Canmar has incorporated special
14 ice resisting features in their drill ships and supply
15 vessels in order to combat ice intrusions. The extent
16 to which these features may be successful is touched
17 on later.

18 The problem of drilling a
19 relief well is aggravated by the fact that both of
20 the Canmar sites are located within a transition zone
21 between the offshore polar pack to the north, and what
22 late in winter becomes landfast ice to the south.
23 During winter the transition zone contains ice which
24 is moving and actively shearing. Although ice breaking
25 vessels could be used to extend the drilling season
26 into the fall, the ice in this region can be too thick in
27 winter to be handled by any existing ship, including the
28 largest icebreakers, but at the same time it is too
29 mobile to permit the use of ice as a platform from which
30 to drill a relief well. Only in a summer period of

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

perhaps three months, and sometimes not even then, is there a time interval in which drill ships can operate.

The probability of an oil, or oil and gas well blowout, is judged to be in the range of one in one thousand to one in ten thousand for each well drilled. As more wells are drilled, the cumulative probability of a blowout would increase. However, if experience is gained in drilling in the Beaufort Sea, the risks per well could be reduced.

The next heading is "Some Effects of Crude Oil on the Aquatic Ecosystem".

The effects of the interaction of crude oil with marine organisms are complex and are extremely difficult to predict in advance of a polluting incident. Direct mortality of marine life through poisoning, coating and asphyxiation, is usually associated with coastal oil spills. There is also a physiological damage to organisms such as reduced fertility and lower body resistance to infection, generally resulting from prolonged exposures to sublethal levels of oil. Disruption of normal migratory and spawning behaviour and feeding patterns -- habits, can occur due to the animals avoidance reactions to oil. Sometimes there is absorption of oil particles into suspended solids which eventually settle to the sea bottom. These sedimented oil particles could be chemically re-induced into the food web by benthic feeders. Changes in water chemistry resulting from the introduction of water-soluble components of crude oil can upset the natural balance of dissolved gases and nutrients.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 The extent and severity of
2 damage to Arctic marine organisms by crude oil depends
3 on numerous factors such as the amount and type of
4 crude oil spilled, the location of the spill, the time
5 of the year, the presence of sea ice, water turbidity,
6 and obviously the abundance and distribution of plant
7 and animal life and their exposure time to the oil.

8 The next heading is "Blowout
9 Scenarios and the Effectiveness of Oil Countermeasures".

10 Canmar has taken the question
11 of countermeasures in the event of a blowout seriously.
12 To what extent can their proposed countermeasures reduce
13 the damage which is to be expected in the event of a
14 blowout? A realistic examination of this question
15 leads to the conclusion that although under very
16 favourable conditions a large fraction of the oil
17 released might be successfully dealt with, the percentage
18 of the time of a blowout when these very favourable
19 conditions would occur is an estimated 45%, so that
20 a large fraction of the oil would escape. Indeed,
21 since the rate of flow of oil used in a scenario is
22 entirely hypothetical, that is the actual flow could
23 vary from a small fraction of a hypothetical 1,500
24 barrels a day to several times this, it would seem
25 necessary to assume in any blowout scenario that the
26 oil which escapes is not much less than the oil released
27 by the blowout. No control systems at present, including
28 the ones proposed by Canmar, other than sealing off
29 the well by the drilling of a relief well or some other
30 technique, shows promise of reducing the possible damage

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 from an oil spill by a factor of ten. That's pretty
2 conservative, a factor of ten.

3 "Preliminary Environmental
4 Assessment". The method adopted in this assessment is
5 to compare the potential for damage which would
6 result from an oil well blowout occurring at either of
7 Canmar's sites number one and two, and at a hypothetical
8 site number three located in the landfast ice zone.
9 Now I've labelled these sites one and two. Site
10 number one is a site which you have seen on a map
11 closer to shore. Site number 2 is one further offshore.
12 Site number three is embedded in the edge of the landfast
13 ice. Pathways and fates of oil are described in
14 scenarios, or narrative; and these are used as the
15 foundation for assessing the impacts on wildlife.

16 The next section is called
17 "The Beaufort Sea", is a description of the whole
18 setting. Now the geographical setting has been covered
19 adequately this morning, and I think I can just go
20 over, just skip around that. It covers the physio-
21 graphic features, and the coastal features, of the
22 Beaufort Sea. So I'll skip over to the sea ice features,
23 on the top of page 5.

24 The growth, movement and decay
25 of the sea ice in the eastern Beaufort Sea, is influenced
26 by the polar pack interacting with the coastlines, the
27 Mackenzie River and the Arctic climate. The average
28 movement of the offshore pack is caused by mean wind
29 stresses over the Arctic Basin, resulting in a clockwise
30 gyre, or ringlike movement. The clockwise speed of the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 ice near the rim of the gyre varies from zero at times,
2 to as much as 25 kilometres a day for short periods
3 in the springtime. Its' average yearly speed is about
4 3 kilometers per day.

5 In summer, the polar pack
6 consists mainly of multi-year floe ice, pressure
7 ridges, rotted first year ice, leads and large pools.
8 In the winter, growing first year ice replaces the
9 open water and the wind-stresses on the ice produce
10 flaw-leads and new pressure ridges. Under short-term
11 wind stresses, the centre of the gyre, or this great
12 pan of ice offshore, can shift, resulting in onshore
13 or offshore movements. Onshore movements in winter
14 and spring are limited by the growth of landfast ice
15 in the coastal bays and shallow shelf water; the
16 landfast ice generally extends seaward to depths of
17 25 meters. In the summer however, excursions of polar
18 pack ice into the southeastern Beaufort Sea are controlled
19 by the vast flow of fresh water from the Mackenzie
20 River, local wind fields and the shallow shelf waters.

21 Extensive scours are produced
22 on the sea-bottom of the shelf by the onshore and
23 alongshore movements of sea ice. These are produced
24 mostly in winter and spring by the grounding of under-
25 ice projections such as pressure ridge keels. Scour
26 trenches generally do not exceed 2 metres in depth, but
27 in places are as much as 6 meters deep. Scouring is
28 common in water depth of 15 to 45 meters, with a
29 maximum activity at 30 meters, within the transition
30 zone.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 During November and December,
2 the landfast ice grows in thickness and increases its
3 area in a series of steps seaward, depending partly
4 on onshore winds. These winds consolidate loose floes
5 at the fast ice edge where they remain in place during
6 offshore drift. By April, the landfast ice has
7 grown to a thickness of 2 meters.

8 Although the polar pack is
9 sometimes blown well offshore in a light ice year,
10 its' nearshore boundary in winter usually lies over
11 the 500 meter depth contour near the edge of the
12 continental shelf. Lying between this pack edge
13 and the fast ice is a transition zone of deforming,
14 sporadically moving, heavily ridged and highly
15 irregular ice. This zone, of active shearing,
16 provides open water, albeit temporary and variable,
17 in winter and spring. The transition zone ice often
18 resembles the polar pack but includes an increasing
19 number of pressure ridges and more first-year ice as
20 the landfast ice is neared.

21 The beginning of breakup
22 in the southern Beaufort Sea is first evident as
23 early as March with the widening of flaw-leads west
24 of Banks Island, under the thrust of east and
25 southeast winds. The simultaneous westward and
26 clockwise movement of the gyre away from Amundsen
27 Gulf produces another long flaw-lead at either the
28 seaward edge of the landfast ice, or further offshore,
29 in the transition zone. Additional radial leads,
30 perpendicular to the coast, also open in the transition

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 zone, forming part of an extensive interconnecting
2 lead system. By April, ice from Amundsen Gulf moves
3 westward to fill the increasing spaces of open water
4 between the fractured ice of the transition zone. If
5 you refer, you could if you wish refer to figures 2
6 to 6 at the back of the document which indicate the
7 major ice movements observed using the NOAA satellite
8 imagery from March 11 to June 21. These describe the
9 gradual development of leads offshore, and if you
10 just turn briefly to those, and I'll just describe.
11 Each one of these diagrams from figure 2 on through to
12 figure 6 show the location of the Canmar sites, and
13 these images from 1975 show that where the Canmar site
14 number 1 is located is often in an open lead, as early
15 as March, and that the ice movements onshore and offshore
16 of the polar pack against the landfast ice continually
17 open and close this lead. We also get a clockwise
18 movement of that offshore ice.

19 The resolution of this imagery
20 is somewhere about half a kilometer, so it doesn't
21 show all the detail that one would expect to see. I
22 think the message here is that both sites are located
23 beyond the landfast ice, and in the more inshore
24 Canmar site is in a zone of active shearing, and has
25 more open water in its vicinity than the site further
26 offshore.

27 By mid-May, the Mackenzie
28 River is in freshet and one month later, considerable
29 open water exists in the nearshore waters of Mackenzie
30 and Kugmallit Bays. By early July the coastal fast ice

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 has disintegrated and moved offshore with the polar
2 pack. If however, westerly winds prevail throughout
3 most of the summer there will be a heavy ice year such
4 as in 1974 when the boundary was roughly on a line
5 between Herschel Island and Atkinson Point on Tuktoyaktuk
6 Peninsula. Generally the summer and fall pack ice
7 edges are distorted southward with protuding tongues and
8 eddies of floe ice. Thus in summer, it is likely that
9 the floe tongues will cause extensive interruptions to
10 drill ships operating at the Canmar sites. The main
11 characteristic of the ice in the southeastern Beaufort
12 Sea is the extreme variability of its extent and
13 movement which render terms such as "average ice
14 concentrations" and "average ice year" of little use.

15 I'll now go on to describe
16 some of the significant oceanographic features.

17 In the southeastern Beaufort
18 Sea the Mackenzie River outflow meets and mixes with
19 the salt water of the Arctic Ocean over much of the
20 wide continental shelf. The river is in freshet from
21 mid-May to early August. During the late winter and
22 spring the flow is reduced to 1/10th of this rate as
23 it spreads out under the landfast ice. The plume of
24 fresh, muddy water flows out over the top of the more
25 saline ocean water, but when the Beaufort Sea is
26 covered with ice, or in the absence of winds, this
27 plume will turn eastward along the shores of Richard
28 Island and Tuktoyaktuk Peninsula toward Amundsen
29 Gulf.

30 The turbid, fresh water layer

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 from the river is normally from two to five meters in
2 thickness, however this thickness increased to eight
3 meters or so in the heavy ice year of 1974, as a result
4 of the damming effect of the polar pack pressing close
5 to shore. The fresh water layer on the surface and
6 those beneath can have -- and the salt water layer
7 beneath -- can have quite different currents, both in
8 direction and speed. When offshore winds drive the
9 fresh surface waters northward, deeper oceanic waters
10 must replace this water in an underflow. Conversely,
11 the fresh surface layer thickens with onshore winds,
12 with a resulting expulsion of saline waters offshore.
13 These counter-currents can cause deep draught ice floes,
14 and thin brash ice to move in opposing directions.

15 An important consequence of the
16 river flow in the winter and spring is that the shallow
17 inshore waters are brackish east of Richards Island
18 and along the Tuktoyaktuk Peninsula. Hence there is
19 over-wintering habitat in the shallow lagoons, estuaries
20 and breached thermokarst lakes well suited to non-oceanic
21 species of fish, invertebrates and micro-organisms.

22 Another feature of the river
23 is its high mud load, hence low light penetration which
24 inhibits primary biological production except where
25 river borne nutrients can be utilized outside the
26 turbid plume.

27 Storm surges or wind tides
28 occur frequently in the southeastern Beaufort Sea.
29 These are increases and possibly decreases in sea
30 level, other than tidal, caused by a wind-driven

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 pile-up of water on the continental shelf. This can
2 be a negative pile-up. At Tuktoyaktuk, between 1962
3 and 1973, 22 positive and 5 negative surges, that is
4 associated with offshore winds, were recorded. Two
5 were more than 2 meters above normal tide fluctuations
6 of .3 meters. Ten occurred during the light ice year
7 of 1963, since there was a great deal more open water
8 available. The offshore condition necessary for a
9 storm surge is a fetch of 50 kilometers or so of
10 open water containing ice concentrations of 3/10 or
11 less, and that is with minor ice floes. So that there
12 can be a rapid movement of the water surface in
13 response to the wind. Surges are normally accompanied
14 by large wind-waves, rapid coastal erosion and
15 inundation of coastal lowlands. Driftwood strand
16 lines, two meters or so above sea level, show that the
17 coast line from Herschel Island to Cape Bathurst has
18 been subjected to storm surges. A winter surge of
19 one meter was recorded on January 6, 1974, generated
20 by the passage of an intense low pressure weather
21 system through the northern Beaufort Sea. It is
22 supposed that the ice slackened toward the north, with
23 offshore winds, and then closed with strong inshore
24 winds. After the wind shift, the ice concentration
25 was low enough to generate water movements toward the
26 shore. Although this surge was not in itself a
27 damaging event, winter surges could cause unusual
28 displacements in the landfast ice and complicate the
29 prediction of oil transport in the event of a blowout.

30 In summary, large positive

1 storm surges require extensive open water and are caused
2 by strong west or northwest winds. Open water is also
3 desired for offshore drilling using ships. High winds
4 are more likely in September and October, and the two
5 meter surges at Tuktoyaktuk occurred on the fourth of
6 September, 1962, and the fourth of October, 1963. Oil
7 from a blowout near the end of the drilling season could
8 co-exist with a storm surge to transport oil inshore into
9 lowlands.

10 The next section really is
11 a description of the wildlife in the Beaufort Sea,
12 and I will ask the question at this moment whether I
13 should pass over that, to include -- there's quite a
14 bit of this material included later on in connection
15 with the scenario, because I realize there has been
16 quite a lot of coverage with the biological panel that
17 was here earlier.

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I'll
19 leave that up to you Mr. Bayly. I haven't read this
20 so you would know better than I whether it's appropriate
21 to --

22 MR. BAYLY: A large amount
23 of this has been gone into by the large panel that we
24 did produce, sir, and perhaps we could leave it out
25 at this point, and I'll just ask Miss Alison to check
26 over it and see if there's anything she'd like Mr.
27 Milne to read, in particular.

28 WITNESS MILNE: Shall I then
29 skip it for the time being?

30 MR. BAYLY: Skip that for the

1 time being, and we may come back to portions of it.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, I think
3 we did, yes, we heard a lot about that. Carry on.

4 WITNESS MILNE: Start at the
5 top of page 9, which is "Scenarios For Oil And Gas Well
6 Blowouts In The Beaufort Sea". I want to make clear
7 what that heading means, "Oil and Gas Well Blowout" is
8 what's being considered, because oil and gas usually
9 co-exist in a blowout, if it's an oilwell blowout?

10 The present plans of Canadian
11 Marine Drilling Co. Ltd., Canmar, are to send their
12 two drill ships into the southeastern Beaufort Sea as
13 early as possible in the summer of 1976. Assuming that
14 1976 will be a light -- a year of light ice, the
15 earliest date that the ships may begin drilling is
16 about the first of August. If it is a heavy ice year,
17 it is unlikely that the ships could proceed to their
18 drilling sites at all.

19 The two drilling sites proposed
20 for the summer of 1976 are shown in Figure 1, in the
21 rear of the document. Site one is in a water depth of
22 26 meters, located about 46 kilometers seaward of
23 Tuktoyaktuk Peninsula; Site two is in a depth of 58
24 meters at a distance of 83 kilometers offshore of Pelly
25 Island. Both sites are situated in the transition zone
26 ice, that is, beyond the depth of 25 meters. The
27 drilling season is not likely to extend beyond mid-October,
28 allowing only 2½ months at either drill site to drill
29 down to possible petroleum-bearing strata. The
30 likelihood of a blowout is increased toward the end of

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the drilling season, as petroleum is encountered.

2 Assuming the postulated blowout
3 occurs on the fifth of October, the second drill ship
4 could, at most, begin work on drilling a relief well,
5 but would be unable to drill down to the petroleum-
6 bearing horizon to control the wild well before freeze-
7 up. In this event we would be faced with a free-running
8 blowout and little hope of controlling it until at
9 least ten months later, in the following summer. Even
10 then it would depend on having a favourable ice year
11 to bring it under control.

12 In some geological oil-bearing
13 structures, debris entrained in the gas and oil within
14 the well-bore can gradually quench or reduce the flow
15 of a wild well. However in the worst case the well could
16 free-run throughout the fall, winter and spring, until
17 the summer of 1977 when action could resume to drill a
18 relief well to bring the blowout under control by that
19 season's end.

20 "The Underwater Oil and Gas
21 Well Blowout". What would this blowout be like? It
22 is postulated that the initial flow of crude oil could
23 be 2,500 barrels per day, and that this flow could
24 decline to 1,500 barrels a day, or in one month's
25 time, as the local region of the reservoir is drained.
26 1,500 barrels a day equals 240 cubic meters of oil per
27 day, and a cubic meter of oil is about a ton approximately,
28 or 87,600 cubic meters of oil a year, assuming the well
29 does not self-seal. Accompanying this would be about
30 1.2 million cubic feet of gas per day, which accompanies

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the crude oil to the sea surface, so you can visualize
2 this gas and the oil coming to the sea surface.

3 Since the blowout orifice is
4 at the sea bottom, gas rises to the water surface in
5 bubbles, carrying the oil with it, in effect creating
6 a bubbler system, which circulates bottom water toward
7 the surface. At the well-head orifice on the bottom, the
8 oil is churned into droplets which rise toward the
9 surface at varying rates. Some of them will coalesce to
10 form larger drops; others, being very small, will remain
11 suspended in the water column for some time and therefore
12 will be moved at the whim of the sub-surface ocean currents.
13 A contingency decision may be made at this point to fire
14 the blowout if it is not already on fire. Assuming
15 calm waters, little ice and negligible currents, it is
16 possible that 90% of the oil could be burned off, although
17 this has not been demonstrated. The tarry residue would
18 be retained locally by the natural water-circulation
19 generated by the rising bubble stream. What is does is
20 forms a wave ring. This simplification breaks down when
21 we consider ocean current, surface waves and moving ice
22 floes. The following paragraphs will describe the possible
23 transport and eventual fate of oil following such a
24 blowout.

25 This part describes the transport
26 of oil during the ensuing fall and winter, after a blowout
27 occurs.

28 The two proposed drilling sites
29 are strongly influenced by the Mackenzie River. When
30 offshore winds blow, the fresh water of the river moves

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 out over the more saline, cooler sub-surface waters.
2 This surface layer of river water is muddy and can be up
3 to eight meters thick. Often the currents in these
4 thin surface waters are quite different from those
5 beneath the sub-surface, more saline water. The
6 surface waters are driven mainly by the wind, while the
7 sub-surface waters are moved by oceanic influences. To
8 complicate flow prediction, young ice or thin rotten
9 floes, which draw little water, commonly move in the
10 direction of the surface currents while the deep-draft
11 old floes can travel against this surface current, under
12 the influence of sub-surface currents. Often, there
13 will be no simple puddle of oil to burn. If a large
14 ice floe happened to float over the site of a burning
15 blowout, the fire is likely to be extinguished.

16 Violent storms are common in
17 the fall of the year. In October, offshore winds drive
18 the newly-forming ice away from the shore and out to sea.
19 Strong northwest winds follow in November, can whip up
20 the waves and drive the ice back to the coast. It is
21 not likely during the late fall that an ignited blowout
22 will remain on fire. The oil will be blown by the
23 wind, be emulsified to some extent, and eventually be
24 driven toward the shoreline of Tuktoyaktuk Peninsula.
25 Here, the Mackenzie River flow will transport the oil
26 along the shore of the peninsula to the northeast.

27 Modest, one meter storm surges
28 occur in mid-October under the thrust of onshore
29 winds, so that the innermost reaches of breached
30 thermokarst lakes, bays and lagoons could be contaminated

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 by oil. As the sea calms between storms, and the landfast
2 ice begins to form from new grey ice and floe fragments,
3 some of the oil will remain mixed in with the surface
4 of the landfast ice. The most rapid reduction of the
5 flow of the Mackenzie River occurs in November and by
6 mid-month the flow is 15% of the mid-summer flow. At
7 this time, the ice forming on the continental shelf
8 can move westward as the offshore influence of the
9 northeast river flow diminishes. What I'm trying to say
10 here is that as the river flow diminishes, its offshore
11 influence diminishes. It is flowing toward the northeast
12 but in this time the influence of the oceanic circulation
13 begins to take over, so that later on by mid-November,
14 it is postulated and understood that at the Canmar site,
15 the general westward gyre circulation is taking over.

16 Marine inshore and offshore
17 clean-up equipment, consisting of floating booms, devices
18 to separate oil from water, and floating incinerators,
19 will be completely inoperable much beyond freeze-up in
20 October. Canmar may attempt to re-ignite the blowout
21 by dropping incendiary material from aircraft at the
22 site. These efforts could be frustrated by intruding
23 ice floes which frequently snuff out the flames. There
24 will be discontinuous movements of multi-year pack ice
25 over the site, remnants of past season's first-year
26 ice and new ice. Leads in this ice can form, freeze
27 and be compressed, the new ice being crushed and mixed
28 with oil.

29 Storm surges sometimes occur
30 during the winter in the southeastern Beaufort Sea.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 These would not necessarily result in oil reaching the
2 frozen shoreline, but could produce a rim of oil along
3 the coastal landfast ice. Since a winter surge can
4 cause a one meter rise in sea level at Tuktoyaktuk, oil
5 would contaminate any ice-free shores but would not enter
6 ice-covered bays and lagoons.

7 By late January, the landfast
8 ice has formed, though incompletely, to seaward, and
9 the ice in the transition zone is moving irregularly
10 westward. Within the transition zone there is often
11 a wide lead or networks of leads and cracks caused by
12 the offshore retreat of the Arctic pack when south or
13 southeast winds blow. It is estimated from satellite
14 imagery, again I refer to the ones showing the sequence
15 of development of open water from early spring into
16 late spring, that Canmar's site number one will be in
17 open water or water covered with new grey ice an
18 estimated 50% of the time from late January through to
19 early May. In contrast, Canmar's site number two, the
20 one further offshore, will be covered with transition zone
21 ice an estimated 90% of the time for this period. Therefore
22 the two proposed sites are distinguished by their
23 position relative to this predictable offshore lead,
24 with the result that a large fraction of the oil
25 released from a sub-sea blowout would have distinctly
26 different histories during the winter and spring, for
27 both these sites.

28 IN some years, possibly one
29 year in ten, site number one, closer to shore, could
30 be incorporated in landfast ice. I've said previously

1 landfast ice generally goes out to 25 meters, but in
2 some years it goes considerably further. Satellite
3 imagery has been examined which showed that the edge
4 of the landfast ice on June 11, 1973, and June 14, 1974,
5 was well landward -- that word should be "landward", at
6 site number one. However, if this site were in the
7 landfast ice in the spring of 1977, the action of the
8 blowout would maintain an open pool above the well
9 which would directly contain a depth of oil equal to
10 one-half the ice thickness. Oil accumulated beyond this
11 volume would flow out over the top of the ice and be
12 absorbed in the surrounding snow cover. Up to 90% of the
13 oil contained within the pool could be burnt, but this,
14 as a proportion of the total oil flow, will depend on
15 the diameter of the pool and the rate at which it can
16 be burned. These will be determined by local conditions
17 and the accessibility of the site. What I'm leading
18 up to here is that a site in the landfast ice doesn't
19 necessarily produce as much oil that escapes westward.

20 So what has happened up to
21 this time, we had the blowout, and we've gone through
22 the winter, and into the spring, and now -- at least
23 into the winter -- and now I'm interested in what the
24 distribution of oil could be like on the fifth of May.
25 Now this is quite important because during the period
26 up to the fifth of May is when a lot of the migratory
27 wildlife come into the Beaufort Sea.

28 Focussing now on a blowout at
29 Canmar site number one, that's the one just off the
30 landfast ice and south of the one further offshore, in

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the period from late January to early May of 1977, oil
2 will rise into any lead over the site left by the
3 northern retreat of the pack and will mix with newly
4 formed frazil ice blown toward the north side of the
5 lead. Should this lead close, the oil rising will also
6 flow under the ice. The lead could vary in width as the
7 offshore pack moves westward, so that new ice which forms
8 in the lead could be compressed as the lead closes to
9 form oiled pressure ridges along the north boundary of
10 the landfast ice. Early in winter, some of these ridges
11 could attach themselves to the seaward extending
12 landfast ice, but by late January they will move westward
13 as part of the transition zone ice and will exist of
14 multiple lines of narrow ridges adjacent to the north
15 boundary of the landfast ice.

16 Apart from active shear leads
17 and northward branching flaw leads, ice concentrations
18 in the transition zone will be 10/10ths. Hence, with
19 minor exceptions, ice excursions over site number one
20 will inhibit ignition of the blowout unless extraordinary
21 and costly efforts are made to maintain open water
22 artificially in this region of moving ice. Canmar
23 proposes to fragment the ice with explosives to promote
24 more effective burning. This technique is likely to
25 be effective during times when ice motion has temporarily
26 ceased. Gas accompanying the oil, though eventually
27 escaping through cracks and narrow leads, will fill under-
28 ice voids and provide a smooth surface to aid in the
29 spreading of oil, rapidly and thinly, under the ice.
30 Beyond the horizontal range of gas escapement, the oil

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 will flow under the ice to fill voids and cavities. The
2 actual under-ice area contaminated would depend largely
3 on the speed of the ice cover moving over the blowout
4 site; and at Canmar site number one, an estimate of the
5 average speed is one kilometer per day to the west, when
6 it is ice covered.

7 For an oil discharge rate of
8 1,500 barrels a day, or 240 cubic meters a day, the
9 width of the swath of oil under the ice is likely to
10 vary between .4 kilometers to 1 kilometer; I have since
11 modified that to be a little narrower than that;
12 depending on the permeability of ice to gas. On the
13 other hand, when the offshore ice retreats and then
14 advances, the westward motion could average ten kilometers
15 per day. This is during the time the gyre is actually
16 not scraping against the landfast ice, it tends to move
17 faster, when it's against the landfast ice, it tends
18 to stick. The oil could be more localized in east-west
19 ridges and displaced under adjacent ice. The total
20 length of the oiled trail to the west from late
21 January to early May could range between 300 to 500
22 kilometers. That takes us pretty well to Barter Island.

23 In summary, assuming a blowout
24 occurred on October 5, 1976, at Canmar site number one,
25 the oil could be dispersed in early May as shown in
26 Figure 7. I have a slide of this, which if people want
27 to see what ^{I think} it might be like, or you can refer to
28 Figure 7.

29 MR. BAYLY: Perhaps we could
30 show that slide. It would be perhaps easier to --

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 not everybody in the room has a copy of Figure 7.

2 A
3 This shows an estimate of what
4 the oil dispersal could be like, from a blowout occuring
5 in the late fall of 1976, and what the picture could
6 be like on May the fifth; and here is Canmar's site.
7 This is a depiction of the buildup of the landfast ice
8 during the fall, and late winter, and indicating that
9 there is a distribution likely of about 2,200 cubic meters
10 of crude oil, distributed rather thinly through this
11 great area of landfast ice. And it also indicates that
12 in the fall, that because of the river flow, in the open
13 water, it will take us up toward Sachs Harbour and south
14 Banks Island, and distribute this oil quite thinly
15 through this area toward Banks Island and the mouth
16 of Amundsen Gulf. I'm quite convinced that that does
17 occur because the other October, when we went into
18 Sachs Harbour in October, this whole area was contaminated
19 by river sediment, so that's quite valid as far as I'm
20 concerned.

21 Later in the fall, as the
22 landfast ice builds up and this general gyre circulation
23 begins to take over, it sort of bounces up against it
24 and down, and up from the landfast ice, and therefore
25 most of the oil, a large percentage of it would reside
26 at the surface of the ice, and then the pressure ridge
27 is extending through this area, with a small fraction
28 of it being under the ice. You're looking at about
29 2,300 cubic meters, or somewhere the order of about
30 2,600 tons, spread very thinly along this region up
here. Now this depiction of how it is is misleading

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 because -- could be misleading -- because you can't draw
2 a line thin enough, but the point that I'm going to come
3 to is that when the spring comes, this area is precisely
4 where the wildlife come, and that's quite important.
5 These are the main migratory groups along this area.
6 So this path does extend over here, about 400 kilometers
7 from the site, over here by May the fifth, in this
8 narrative.

9 Q And Mr. Milne, when
10 you say "over here" for the record, you're indicating
11 westward towards Alaska.

12 A That's right.
13 It would go -- perhaps I've made as far as Point Barrow,
14 perhaps not that far, depending on the year, and the
15 average speed of the gyre at this location.

16 Maybe, while I'm up here, I
17 could just have the next slide too, with the Canmar site
18 number two which is further offshore, we'd have a
19 somewhat similar situation existing during the buildup
20 of the landfast ice, where the oil could be accumulated,
21 about the same amount, maybe slightly less, 1,800 cubic
22 meters, in the landfast ice as it builds out from the
23 shore. In the late fall we'd have about the same
24 distribution up here, but then because this is not
25 in the main shear lead, most of the time, we would get
26 a trail which would result from these sporadic irregular
27 movements of the gyre as it moves clockwise in this
28 area. These could be disconnected as here, but it
29 would go about the same distance off to the west.

30 Now the message I will mention

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 here is this, as far as wildlife problems are concerned,
2 and migratory routes, this is perhaps less threatening
3 than the site nearer to shore, simply because it's in
4 a less -- it's not in a main east-west lead that opens
5 up in the springtime, and is a main migratory region,
6 an active zone of active shearing.

7 This is a depiction of what
8 might happen if for some reason Canmar decided well,
9 they're going to drill in the landfast ice zone. What
10 it really means is that the bulk of the oil which would
11 have otherwise gone off to the west, would be confined
12 to this area, here, and in such a way that quite a large
13 percentage could possibly be burned off, the part that
14 would otherwise go over here.

15 A blowout at Canmar Site number
16 2 on the fifth of October -- oh, perhaps I've missed a
17 bit here, on the top, I started on the top of page
18 12.

19 In summary, assuming a blowout
20 occurred on the fifth of October, 1976, at Canmar Site
21 number one, the oil could be dispersed in early May as
22 was shown in that first slide in Figure 7. Assumptions
23 are that: 3,500 cubic meters will be blown toward the
24 coast by winds associated with a storm surge on October
25 10, that would be in the late fall, which is a very
26 likely occurrence; 5,000 cubic meters will have been
27 dispersed northeast towards Banks Island in the fall,
28 22,000 cubic meters will be dispersed in the growing
29 and the seaward extending landfast ice, part toward
30 the northeast until mid-November, and the remainder to

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the west until late January; finally, 2,300 cubic meters
2 will be distributed along the north edge of the landfast
3 ice, 400 kilometers to the west, or 75 kilometers west
4 of the Alaska-Yukon border as far as Barter Island.

5 Q Mr. Milne, was
6 that 2,300 or 23,000?

7 A 23,000, I'm sorry. That's
8 roughly about 2,600 tons.

9 A blowout at Canmar Site number
10 two, which was the second slide I showed, on the fifth
11 of October this year, would likely produce a somewhat
12 different distribution of crude oil by the fifth of May,
13 in 1977. At site number two, it would seldom be in
14 open water in the late winter, so that from late
15 January to early May, the oil would most likely be
16 encapsulated within the ice of the transition zone.
17 Prior to this, much of the oil would be incorporated
18 in the landfast ice as depicted for Site number one,
19 although somewhat less since the westward ice circulation
20 would be established sooner offshore.

21 For comparison with the two
22 Canmar sites, a hypothetical landfast ice site number
23 three, at a depth of 18 meters, was shown on that third
24 slide. The only significant difference in the distri-
25 bution of crude oil from October fifth blowout at site
26 number three would be the containment of the oil within
27 a restricted area in the landfast ice by late January.
28 If all the oil from late January until break-up of the
29 landfast ice is eventually burnt, then we would have
30 the disposition as shown in that third slide, with no

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 trail-off, virtually none trailing off far to the west.

2 The oil contaminated landfast
3 ice^{would} cover an area of approximately 7,700 square kilometers.

4 That's in each case, it's approximately that amount.

5 Most of the 22,000 cubic meters of oil in the landfast
6 ice would likely to be concentrated in narrow bands or
7 ridges parallel to the coastline. This is because of
8 the way the landfast ice tends to form, and as a result
9 of onshore and offshore stiction. A useful visualization
10 is that the oil coverage would be equivalent to forty
11 bands of oil .3 centimeter thick and one meter
12 wide, each spaced one kilometer apart. In the area
13 south of Banks Island, shown contaminated by 5,000
14 cubic meters of oil, the average oil concentration would
15 be one-half the amount computed for the landfast ice.
16 These concentrations also apply to the oil dispersals
17 shown for site number two and three. I just wanted to
18 get this sort of image of how much it would look like;
19 one can divide it up in different ways.

20 Any consideration of weathering
21 which would apply to a large fraction of the total oil
22 discharged from a blowout at site number one, and which
23 could reduce the oil volume by 30% has been ignored.
24 Weathered oil would be difficult to burn. In contrast,
25 oil trapped in the ice remains in its original state.
26 What I mean here is the oil which is incorporated within
27 the ice. That oil droplets rising from the sea bottom
28 well-head have different residence times in the water
29 column and can be dispersed widely depending on the
30 subsurface currents, has also been ignored. That's an

1 awkward sentence, but what it means is some of them rise
2 faster than others, and the ones that rise very slowly
3 and which are small, can travel in subsurface currents.

4 Therefore one might expect to
5 have a considerable number of droplets, perhaps 2% of
6 the total oil volume, incorporated into the ice sheet
7 well beyond the estimated swath widths. This is the
8 swath painted by the underwater blowout as the ice moves
9 over the top of it. It must be emphasized that the
10 swaths of oil under the transition zone ice would not
11 be continuous ribbons of oil, but would often consist
12 of disjointed segments. It is likely that the detection
13 in the spring, of the fragmented oil trails originating
14 from site two, in particular could be aided by radio
15 beacons deployed near the blowout site at intervals
16 throughout the winter.

17 Next, I want to touch on the
18 "Seasonal Effects On Oil In Ice During May, 1977". Now,
19 it's clear that something significant must be said about
20 May, and this is what's significant. It's the time when
21 oil begins to emerge to the surface, because of the
22 increased solar radiation and so on.

23 Early May is a critical time
24 in the Beaufort Sea. The sea ice ceases growing; the
25 brine in the ice would be replaced by oil which will
26 slowly rise to the surface of the ice. The sun's heat
27 absorbed by the dark-colored oil within the ice, will
28 create melt pools which form natural containers for
29 the surfacing oil. At the same time, the offshore leads
30 form a network of highways and feeding locations for

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 migratory and resident wildlife. Much of the oil locked
2 into the ice throughout the winter and spring, resulting
3 from a blowout at site number one, that's the more
4 southerly site, would be released precisely in the
5 main migration routes.

6 Early May is also the optimum
7 time to initiate disposal of oil by burning. The oil
8 which has been trapped within the ice in a fresh state,
9 will burn easily as it emerges; however, the weathered
10 oil at the surface will not readily burn. Judging from
11 the scenarios of oil dispersal, 60% of the oil from
12 site number one could be weathered and about 40% from
13 site number two. The unweathered portion would emerge
14 from within the ice as small scattered patches and
15 pools extending along paths extending 400 kilometers
16 to the west. Burning significant fractions of this
17 oil, perhaps at most 20%, is questionable in view of the
18 vast areas to clean up, the short two weeks or so of
19 time available before the oil surfacing would become
20 too weathered to burn, and the poor flying weather
21 existing toward mid-May.

22 Now I'll go on to what I think
23 might happen to the oil movement from June to early
24 July, which is from through the breakup in 1977.

25 In June, the ice is rotting
26 rapidly and constantly moving at the whim of the wind.
27 Gradually, in early July, the landfast ice breaks up
28 and moves offshore. Larger floes break up into smaller
29 floes. With air support, maintenance of a conflagration
30 at a blowout site would become easier since the floes

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 will be rotten and more permeable to gases. By early
2 July the Canmar tugs and oil clean-up equipment could
3 attempt to proceed to the blowout site to corral the
4 oil. However, in heavy ice years, migration of floes
5 near site number one, and more so at site number 2, would
6 frequently frustrate the effectiveness of oil clean-up
7 activities. At hypothetical site number three, that's
8 in the landfast zone, oil containment and burn-off
9 would be interrupted briefly as the landfast ice breaks
10 up and moves offshore allowing marine equipment to
11 approach the blowout site.

12 In spring 1977, the Mackenzie
13 River will be at its maximum flow. The surface water,
14 in calm weather, will carry the landfast ice offshore
15 to the northeast, while prevailing winds will tend
16 to move the pack ice to the northwest. A likely result
17 will be that prior to early July, this interaction of
18 winds and currents will move the oil fixed in the
19 landfast ice, and transition zone ice, into the Arctic
20 pack. There the oil will weather and merge with
21 rotting floes and reside within the open pools and leads
22 at the southern periphery of the gyre. Consequently,
23 most Canadian shoreline contamination other than that
24 from mid-October, 1976, could be caused by oil escaping
25 containment and clean-up from early July to the end
26 of summer. That is before it would be possible to
27 drill a relief well. Much of the oil discharged earlier
28 will have travelled westward with the pack ice to the
29 north of the Alaskan coast as far as Point Barrow.

30 "The Climatic Effects". The

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 amount of weathered oil which would be dispersed from
2 a single oil well blowout running wild for a year, would
3 be unlikely to have any effect whatever on global or
4 even local climate. While it is certain that oiled ice
5 will melt much faster than clean ice, natural fluctuations
6 in the yearly ice cover would mask the extremely small
7 changes which would be caused by oil in the volumes
8 assumed.

9 Now we get on to the following
10 year's relief well situation; "Relief Well Drilling in
11 the Summer of 1977". We're now at the top of page 14.

12 In the meantime, plans for
13 relief well drilling will be laid by Canmar. Following
14 news of a blowout in October, two of Canada's largest
15 icebreakers may be overwintered in the southeastern
16 Beaufort Sea to assist a Canmar drill ship to maximize
17 its 1977 drilling season. Plans will have been set for
18 burning the oil expected to emerge from the sea ice in
19 early May. Also, supplementary offshore and inshore
20 booms, skimmers and burners will be mobilized in the
21 delta. Ice-strengthened tugs and aircraft support will
22 be prepared for the anticipated oil countermeasures
23 operation in the summer. Steps will be taken to set
24 up a comprehensive environmental prediction system to
25 support marine operations and to predict oil-slick
26 movements.

27 Drilling a relief well to
28 control a blowout is a more complex operation than either
29 wildcat or delineation drilling. Despite better
30 knowledge of geological formations, it cannot be expected

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 that less time will be taken to drill the oil reservoir
2 than it did to drill -- less time will be taken to drill
3 to the oil reservoir, than it did to time taken to drill
4 the original well. I hope you went through my stumbles
5 there.

6 The scenario assumes sixty days
7 of drilling in 1976, before the hypothetical blowout
8 occurred. Spudding-in for a relief well at either Canmar
9 site could occur on July 15, 1977. Assuming there were
10 no significant interruptions, control could be gained
11 by October 1, 1977. From July to October first, the
12 blowout could have discharged, that is during the
13 summertime, 21,000 cubic meters of oil, and some 3.1
14 million cubic meters of gas to the sea surface.

15 As with the original well, the
16 blowout preventor, or BOP stack of the relief well will
17 be placed in a jetted out cavity or in a silo in the
18 sea bottom to protect it from intruding polar floes in
19 the summer. And now, I think it's perhaps worthwhile,
20 showing some of the slides following. These are referred
21 to as Figures 10, 11 and 12.

22 The main reason for showing
23 these drawings, taken from satellite imagery in August
24 31, 1973, is to show that at some time there are likely
25 to be significant interruptions of drilling procedures
26 at either of the Canmar sites, shown as number one, number
27 two. Now, this line depicts a cloud edge which obscured
28 observation here, at this date, however these are quite
29 large, one kilometer size. The dots which are visible here
30 refer to one kilometer diameter floes intruding toward

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the Canmar site number one, and then Canmar's contingency
2 plans of -- pardon me -- Canmar's operating plans, these
3 are their alert zones which define the different kind
4 of operations they would conduct if icefloes intruded
5 into any one of them. So, at this time, when observations
6 was conducted here, right in the optimum time of the
7 drilling season, in 1973 which was a good ice year, we do
8 have a considerable number of possible interruptions.

9 Again, on August 26 of this year,
10 which was a heavier ice year, number two was completely
11 in 10/10 pack ice, number one was obviously inoperable.
12 The next one, please.

13 And here in this year, about the
14 same time, a moderately decent ice year, Canmar site
15 number two is completely under ice here, and the edge of
16 the pack, and the Canmar site number one has very large
17 floes intruding around it. I must stress here that the
18 number of observations you can make during the summer
19 are very limited, with ERTS imagery, and it's just what
20 you can see, so it doesn't really tell you very much about
21 how many interruptions there are likely to be.

22 THE COMMISSIONER: Dr. Milne,
23 excuse me, if you had a blowout at site number two, and
24 you went there under conditions such as those prevailing
25 in '74, when it was covered by pack ice in the summer,
26 I take it is what you said, wouldn't that make it easier
27 to drill a relief well. Couldn't you set up on the pack
28 ice?

29 A These edges are moving,
30 subject to the local weather. They can move very rapidly.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 This is in effect, not a fixed system; in fact you look
2 at the images close around this and you find that this
3 edge has moved down here, and it'll move back. What you
4 can glimpse just through the cloud, but it's very mobile,
5 this ice is extremely mobile here.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: I see, and
7 your hypothetical site number three, is landfast ice,
8 where you could actually drill your exploration well
9 through the ice. That supposition's fair, is it?

10 A Yes, well, there's another
11 factor which I haven't enlarged on , and that is the
12 duration of what you might call the open water season on
13 say, based on the average over the last twenty years, is
14 much higher the more southerly you go. In other words,
15 in the land fast ice, you have a longer operating season
16 than you would have here, and you have a much longer
17 operating season than you have here, because of the
18 location of the site with respect to the normal migrations
19 and location of the pack ice edge; so what I'm concluding
20 here , is that in my comments is that, in that site and
21 that site you have really different durations of open
22 water seasons on the average.

23 MR. GOUDGE: Could you identify
24 those sir as site number, I take it, number one and two --

25 A Number one, number two.

26 MR. BAYLY: What you've said,
27 Mr. Milne, as I understand it, is that you would have a
28 larger number of open water days at site one than at site
29 two.

30 A Correct.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, maybe
2 I missed something, but I thought site three, hypothetical
3 site three, was an exploration well drilled in landfast
4 ice.

5 A It's drilled in the landfast
6 ice zone, --

7 THE COMMISSIONER: But in open
8 water.

9 A -- in open water.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Right. Sorry,
11 I follow you now; but drilling in landfast ice is
12 technologically feasible. Isn't that what they do in the
13 high Arctic, or the central Arctic, or wherever they're
14 drilling.

15 A Yes. I think in this
16 particular case sir it's -- one can devise a possibly
17 landfast ice location -- one could presumably under some
18 circumstance take mobile equipment onto the landfast ice
19 and possibly build an artificial ice platform, but the
20 chances of doing that are not very good, because it's
21 not like landfast ice in the archipelago where you have
22 a much longer time of stable ice than you do in this
23 location, it builds up during the winter, and you don't
24 have the long period of time, degrees^{days} of freezing to
25 permit an ice platform to be built up to support the
26 drill rig, nor is there any assurance that the landfast
27 ice does not move as a result of winter surges, and in
28 fact it does and has been measured to move considerable
29 distances during the late winter and early spring, a
30 matter of 100 meters or so.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 THE COMMISSIONER: So that, where
2 they're drilling for oil and gas in the archipelago,
3 in the Sverdrup Basin, I think it's called, they are
4 able to drill on ice and through ice that is stable,
5 year round, is that the situation?

6 A No, it's not stable year
7 round, it'll be stable for when the ice is thick enough
8 to support equipment along till when it begins to decay
9 in mid-May, early June.

10 Q So they have a winter
11 drilling season?

12 A That's right.

13 Q What I'm getting at I
14 suppose is, we have been drilling; first of all we have
15 these artificial islands here in the vicinity of the
16 delta since, we've been drilling in these artificial
17 islands immediately offshore for two or three years, we've
18 been drilling in the archipelago for two or three years
19 I suppose. Is there any succinct way of -- well, what
20 I suppose I'm getting at is -- was there a Beaufort study
21 project prior to the embarking upon a drilling program
22 in the archipelago?

23 A No, there was not; but at
24 the same time I'm aware that in the archipelago that
25 the ice conditions there are more benign than they are
26 in the Beaufort Sea. The fast ice is known not to move
27 as it does in the boundaries of the Beaufort Sea; is
28 known to have a longer duration and account has been taken
29 of the possibility of being able to drill a relief well
30 in offshore locations. Artificial islands, that's another

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 in mid-October, then you would expect a considerable
2 amount of oil to reach the coast during the summer of
3 1977, during that drilling season. This assumes that a
4 relief well is successful in 1977; and I mentioned also
5 the intrusions of the pack ice which could disrupt a
6 relief well drilling activity, so, and also the movements
7 of the free oil will be governed by the winds and local
8 surface currents. In the absence of winds, the surface
9 currents have minor tidal components but are mostly from
10 turbid fresh river water extending to beyond the Canmar
11 sites and trending to the northwest to Amundsen Gulf;
12 so in the summertime you have quite an extensive river
13 influence and as we mentioned before, that the river
14 will normally trend off to the northeast, it should be,
15 to Amundsen Gulf, as a result of Coriolis force.

16 Onshore and offshore winds will
17 modify this flow of the river, and this was outlined
18 earlier. It is clear that west and northwest winds will
19 drive floating oil to the sea coast along the shores of
20 Richards Island and Tuk Peninsula. If coincident with
21 these winds there is a large expanse of open water, a
22 storm surge could be generated. Minor surges of 1 to
23 1.5 meters are common throughout the summer; for
24 example in 1963 between July 5 & October 16, there were
25 ten surges. One exceeded two meters and seven had
26 amplitudes in excess of one meter. Most years experience
27 three or more surges in the summer.

28 Weather systems move through,
29 as to the southern Beaufort Sea, at approximately two
30 week intervals, in the summer, resulting in an equal

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 probability of northwest and southeast winds. Therefore
2 the 21,000 cubic meters of oil, which is the amount
3 assumed that would escape from July -- in this open water
4 period -- if not burnt or contained, will fan out in
5 all directions to the boundaries and edges of the ice-free
6 waters of the southeastern Beaufort Sea, with a slight
7 bias to the northeast due to the river flow. If we now
8 assume a paraffinic type crude oil, 30% of this volume,
9 or the more toxic light ends or aromatics, could evaporate
10 within 48 hours. Of the remaining 14,700 cubic meters, 50%
11 of this or 7,350 cubic meters could impinge directly on
12 the shorelines of Richards Island and Tuk Peninsula. The
13 greatest concentrations would paint the exposed coasts,
14 headland, lowlands, inlets and so on between Kugmallit
15 Bay and Baillie Islands. This is because of the location
16 of the site as postulated, that's where it would go; so
17 what we're looking at is about 7,000 odd cubic meters
18 which could fan out in -- which would be the fraction
19 ending up on the shore after a major amount has evaporated
20 and some of it has gone off to the north.

21 Oilspill countermeasures can
22 reduce this quantity substantially, although their
23 effectiveness both offshore and along the shore will
24 depend almost entirely on periods of relative calm. The
25 oil and gas blowout envisaged is unlikely to remain
26 ignited in winds and waves, since the wide-spread oil
27 film could remain below its flash point. This is because
28 the water's cold, and knowledge today indicates that if
29 oil is spread on cold water, it is too cold to ignite
30 easily, unless it has quite a thick film.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 Winds, waves and accompanying
2 surface currents would also reduce the effectiveness of
3 containment booms. For the month of July, August and
4 September of the years 1953 to 1972, offshore winds
5 with speeds less than eleven knots, were recorded about
6 45% of the time. Hence, a rough estimate of oil escapement
7 from the blowout site is 55% in the summertime. Inshore,
8 the countermeasures effectiveness could be poorer. In
9 selected bays where efforts could be concentrated, again
10 55% escapement is likely; therefore using percentages
11 of 55% offshore, and of the total amount inshore 95%
12 escapement, then an estimated 7,350 cubic meters of
13 weathered oil originally destined to reach the shoreline
14 during the summer windy period would be reduced to about
15 3,800 cubic meters, as a consequence of counter measures.
16 This would flow to the shore at a rate of about 1,300
17 cubic meters a month.

18 This volume of oil could be
19 added to the weathered residue of the 3,500 cubic meters
20 of oil already on the coast from the fall of 1976,
21 immediately after the blowout occurred and before
22 freeze-up, that was. Assuming that weathering would
23 leave 70% of this, the fall contribution would have
24 been 2,450 cubic meters of oil. Taking into consideration
25 the 400 kilometers of coastline between Kugmallit Bay
26 and Baillie Islands most likely to be affected, the
27 2,450 cubic meters from October 1976 will paint the
28 coastlines with an amount of oil equivalent to a band
29 one meter wide by a little over half a centimeter thick.
30 Then, from the summer, the following summer, the 1,300 cubic

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 meters^{of oil} per month would continue to increase this
2 thickness at the rate of a little less than half a
3 centimeter per month during the summer of 1977; so if
4 you can get that picture of this equivalency, this is
5 really what I'm trying to drive at. It's clear also
6 that it would be possible for this oil to be concentrated
7 over a much shorter coastline, depending on the actual
8 weather systems, which would be encountered during that
9 particular summer.

10 It is probable that half of this
11 oil would be immobilized on spits, bars and headlands,
12 leaving the remaining half to contaminate estuaries,
13 lagoons and low-lying coastal plains. During storms,
14 oil can be incorporated into the sediments of bars and
15 spits and later can be re-exposed to float on the water
16 as these sediments erode some indeterminate time later.

17 So, just to sum up what I've
18 been saying, there's a site comparison with regard to
19 environmental threat from oil.

20 The fate of oil from both
21 Canmar sites and hypothetical site number three has
22 been described under the assumption that a blowout
23 occurred on October 5, 1976. There would appear to be
24 significant differences amongst the sites regarding
25 potentially damaging effects on marine wildlife; and
26 as I pointed out before, the distribution of oil is
27 different, and that's shown again on Figures 7, 8 and
28 9, which you have already seen. It is evident that
29 oil blowouts at any of the three sites could be equally
30 damaging to the coastal environment along Tuk Peninsula.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

Oil from hypothetical site number three, in the landfast ice zone, would be least damaging to offshore migratory and resident wildlife, assuming that the oil can be burnt off or otherwise disposed of in a pool in the ice or polynia in the fast ice during springtime.

Oil from site number one would be most damaging to offshore migratory and resident wildlife because of its proximity to the main east-west lead immediately offshore of the fast ice. A large fraction, perhaps 60% of the 23,000 cubic meters of crude oil discharged from late January to May 5, could be remobilized in this lead.

Oil from site number two would appear to be less damaging than from site number one, to offshore wildlife since much of the oil discharged offshore in the transition zone would be more widely dispersed and less available to contaminate the main east-west ~~flow~~ lead used by resident and migratory marine mammals; and that's not necessarily for birds, I'm saying mammals here.

MR. GOUDGE: I wonder if there's a major break in Mr. Milne's paper; would it be appropriate to break now? We've been going for over an hour and a half.

THE COMMISSIONER: Sure, fine. We'll take a coffee break and then perhaps another one later on, because we started early.

(MINUTES OF ENVIRONMENTAL SOCIAL COMMITTEE
TASK FORCE ON NORTHERN OIL DEVELOPMENT MARKED
EXHIBIT 465)

(PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 3:05 P.M.)

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll
come to order again.

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Milne,
will you continue with your evidence?

WITNESS MILNE: I will now
continue describing the effects of oil on biota in
the Beaufort Sea and these are described in the con-
text of the scenarios that have been developed up to
this time, and they're divided into seasons, as was
the -- as were the scenarios. In the following --
this is the middle of page 16 -- in the following
impact assessment, the effects of oil on seasonal
and resident biota of the south-eastern Beaufort Sea
are considered. Short-term and chronic responses
to oil contaminated habitats at different seasons
of the year are predicted. Emphasis is on critical
niches and life patterns such as migrations in leads,
and overwintering in coastal bays.

So now I'll touch on the
autumn of the year, which is the period following
the imaginary blowout on October 5th.

Now the imaginary blowout
on October 5, 1976 at either C anmar site would deposit
several thousand cubic meters of weathered oil on the
north-west shoreline of Tuk Peninsula, in Kugmallit Bay
and along the north-east coast of Richards Island.
Compared to predicted quantities discharged offshore
in the landfast ice and transition zone, the coastal
spill would be relatively small; nevertheless, it would

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In C hief

1 produce
2 significant contamination of about 400 kilometers of
3 shoreline and embayments. A reduced impact of this
4 pollution on marine mammals and birds is predicted in
5 autumn. Most sea birds, geese and shore birds have
6 migrated out of the Mackenzie Delta area by late Sept-
7 ember and October. Ringed and bearded seals are present
8 but not concentrated, and could probably avoid slicks
9 or contaminated inshore waters. The Arctic fox is
10 confined to the coastal tundra until the landfast ic e
11 forms. The intertidal zone of the Beaufort Sea is vir-
12 tually barren and damage to invertebrate fauna would
13 be minimal. During October or November, depending on
14 when freezeup occurs, the bears immediately migrate
15 south, thus reaching more seals. 86% of bear tracks
16 observed in October are headed south. Many bears move
17 out onto young sea ice barely thick enough to support
18 them. In years when large amounts of pack ice are blown
19 south to the mainland coast such as in 1970 and '75,
20 bears are more abundant near shore. It is not known
21 whether or not polar bears actively avoid oil contamin-
22 ation. However, it is predicted that tens of bears
23 could be in contact with oil, especially in the land-
24 fast ice zone near the blowout site. However, the major
25 ecological concerns in coastal waters are the fresh-
26 water and marine fishes which, during October and on
27 through the winter, feed or migrate along the shallow
28 inshore waters of Richards Island and Tuk Peninsula.
29 Overwintering concentrations exist in Mason and Mallick
30 Bays on Richards Island, Tuktoyaktuk Harbour, and in
numerous interconnecting embayments of Tuk Peninsula.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 An estimate of the standing crop for Mackenzie region
2 freshwater and anadromous fishes is over 500 tons.

3 The same protected waters
4 are nurseries or rearing habitat for fry which are
5 swept down the Mackenzie River soon after hatching.
6 Fisheries surveys have revealed that over 60% of the
7 total fry catch from lakes, streams, channels and
8 coastal waters of the Mackenzie Delta region are con-
9 centrated in low salinity, shallow inshore waters.
10 Here also are found several species of normally marine
11 fishes such as herring, four-horned sculpin and Arctic
12 flounder, which are able to tolerate low salinity wa-
13 ters. These move inshore as large schools by early
14 summer to spawn in the shallow coastal waters of
15 Tuk Peninsula. By autumn large numbers of herring fry
16 are still inshore and could be subject to oil contamin-
17 ation.

18 Coastal bays and lagoons
19 behind barrier beaches are natural traps for oil
20 floating to the shore. Features of these habitats are
21 frequent fall storm surges and between times, low rates
22 of water exchange; both increase the chance of oil
23 persisting in these highly productive fish habitats.

24 The significance of heavy
25 fish kills of both breeding and juvenile components of
26 Arctic freshwater and marine stocks may be high.
27 Undoubtedly the recovery of the populations to
28 pre-spill status will be slow. Growth of the fishes is
29 slow over a life span of 15 to 20 years. Maturity is
30 usually delayed until age five years or older. Only

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 once in every five or more years are successful year
2 classes produced by many species. Repopulation in
3 local areas of fish depletions is possible by
4 migration of unaffected fish from unpolluted areas
5 of the Mackenzie drainage and nearshore waters. This
6 assumes the fishes' food supply, mainly benthic inver-
7 tebrates, have recovered from oil pollution of the
8 embayments. If c onsiderable quantities of oil are
9 buried in the bottom sediments, thus acting as persistent
10 toxicants to bottom dwelling organisms, recuperation
11 of fish stocks could be delayed for at least a decade.

12 Now we'll go onto the winter
13 season. Up to 15,000 ringed seals and 2,500 bearded
14 seals are concentrated in the leads of the transition
15 zone from Herschel Island along the mainland and
16 north to the west coast of Banks Island. Of these
17 numbers, 35% of the ringed seals and 50% of the bearded
18 seals are distributed along the active east-west
19 shear leads between Herschel Island and Cape Bathurst,
20 which could be contaminated by tens of thousands of
21 cubic meters of oil in the event of an oil well blowout
22 at either Canmar site, but more so from site No. 1. It
23 is highly likely that these mobile animals will be in
24 contact with oil to varying degrees.

25 Whether or not large seal kills
26 will result from an oil blowout will depend on the
27 duration of the seals' exposure to oil and their general
28 state of health. Both species -- that is the ringed and
29 the bearded seals -- travel the network of leads in
30 attempts to remain in ice-free ones, thus minimizing

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the maintenance of breathing holes. As a result, the
2 probability of oil contact is high. The time of exposure
3 to oil may, however, be short, depending on choices
4 of escape routes. Experimentally, oiling of ringed
5 seals has demonstrated that healthy animals are not
6 permanently damaged by short periods of physical
7 contact with Norman Wells crude oil.

8 Bearded seals feed mainly on
9 zoobenthos, such as gastropods, sea cucumbers, and large
10 crustaceans, hence oil contamination of the ice or
11 water surface will not deplete their food supply.

12 In winter, ringed seals feed
13 almost exclusively on Arctic cod, the most abundant
14 offshore fish which inhabits the underice surface and
15 surface waters of the leads. Extensive oil contamination
16 of the lead network will indirectly or directly degrade
17 the local cod population by smothering underice algae
18 and crustaceans upon which they prey.

19 Lack of food, lack of snow
20 cover for birth lair construction, and heavy winter
21 ice in the transition zone cause large natural fluctuations
22 in productivity, nutritional states, and population
23 sizes of ringed seals. These in turn reflect
24 on the distribution and survival of their major predators,
25 the polar bears. For example, there was almost a
26 50% decline in numbers of ringed and bearded seals
27 as well as a tenfold reduction in the pupping success,
28 both attributable to the heavy ice year of 1974. This
29 resulted in redistribution of polar bears and poor
30 survival of cubs. Environmental stresses will compound

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 the debilitating effects of oil pollution; laboratory
2 experiments show that ringed seals stressed by transpor-
3 tation and handling succumb within a few hours of
4 exposure to oil pollution levels which are relatively
5 harmless to unstressed animals. Natural wildlife
6 mortality as opposed to that attributed to exploratory
7 drilling activities, will be difficult, if not
8 impossible, to determine. However, it is critically
9 important to ensure that detrimental effects of
10 exploration do not coincide with, and thus aggravate,
11 stresses that seals and other wildlife populations
12 may already be experiencing through natural causes.

13 If oil-related seal kills
14 did take place north of Richards Island and Tuk Penin-
15 sula, the recovery of the bearded seal populations
16 would be slow. Since offshore leads are used for feed-
17 ing as well as for breeding by this species, substantial
18 numbers of breeding adults, adolescents, and pups
19 would be killed simultaneously. In contrast, the ringed
20 seals prime pupping habitat is the stable landfast ice
21 to the east of the Mackenzie Delta and beyond potential
22 winter contamination from a free-running oil well blow-
23 out. The potential kill of sub-adult ringed seal
24 population could be 30% or greater, although its
25 recovery is insured by isolation of its breeding stock.

26 The offshore leads in the
27 transition zone, critical to the survival of over-
28 wintering ringed seals and breeding and feeding bearded
29 seals, are consequently important areas for feeding
30 polar bears and scavenging Arctic foxes. Even though

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 a major seal kill might not affect the eventual recovery
2 of their populations, reduced numbers over several years
3 will certainly affect the distribution and possibly the
4 survival of the polar bears, and to a lesser degree,
5 Arctic foxes. The harm caused by oiling a bear's
6 insulating fur or by the ingestion of oiled seal flesh
7 and blubber is not known.

8 So that section is really
9 covering the resident populations. Now we're moving
10 onto the springtime, essentially the months of May and
11 June, and what might happen there.

12 Wildlife in the sub-Beaufort
13 Sea exists in a harsh environment, not in the sense
14 of low temperatures alone, but from a very abbreviated
15 season of phytoplankton production. In this regard,
16 May, June and July are the most important months of
17 the entire year, when intense spring illumination
18 permits photosynthesis to proceed at a high rate.
19 Animal life, particularly the zooplankton, are
20 adapted to a short feast and thereafter a long famine.
21 Within a few weeks, the invertebrates accumulate
22 nutrient reserves for the production of eggs and to
23 sustain them through the winter. Oil contamination
24 of the surface and open water invertebrate communities
25 could seriously impair their ability to capitalize
26 successfully on the peak availability of food. The
27 quantities of oil and its dispersion from a single
28 blowout from either Canmar site are not likely to
29 threaten long-term survival and recovery of Beaufort
30 Sea plankton communities. However, local depletion

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 of the important spring production and of dependent
2 invertebrates in the leads and ice of the transition
3 zone could directly affect the migrant whales and
4 sea birds which rely exclusively on these habitats
5 for spring feeding. As in winter, the active leads
6 off the mainland coast in Amundsen Gulf and west of
7 Banks Island are also important spring habitats of
8 polar bears and seals. Adult ringed and bearded
9 seals breed from mid-March through mid-May. Although
10 not gregarious animals, there is a seasonal aggrega-
11 tion of over 50,000 animals in the transition zone
12 when they haul out to moult in late June, immediately
13 prior to breakup. The annual moult is known to be
14 stressful for the seals. In spring the decrease in
15 blubber can reduce the animal's weight by 23 to 40%.
16 Oil from a previous seven-month accumulation in the
17 transition zone and fresh pollution in the vicinity
18 of the drillsite could contaminate large numbers,
19 potentially the majority of bearded and ringed seal
20 populations. The added stress of the contact with
21 oil during the moult may be potentially lethal because
22 of the low state of health of these animals.

23 It is not surprising that
24 over 80% of polar bear sightings from late March to
25 mid-May are concentrated on 9/10ths to 10/10ths ice
26 cover near active leads such as those in the vicinity
27 of Baillie Islands. Ringed and bearded seals are
28 concentrated here where the combinations of currents
29 and winds for a persistent open pool -- that sounds
30 funny -- provide a persistent open pool and allow the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 animals easy access to the air. This type of habitat
2 is mainly restricted to the transition zone where
3 leads are widening in the springtime. A blowout at
4 either of the two Canmar sites could contaminate to
5 varying degrees up to one-third of this critical
6 habitat during the spring of '76-'77. Avoidance of
7 contaminated leads by moulting seals is not assured,
8 hence if seal kills occurred they would affect
9 dependent polar bear populations, some of which are
10 international. Some fraction of the Arctic fox and
11 ringed seal populations of the Beaufort Sea are probably
12 also international.

13 Annual spring migrations
14 into the south-eastern Beaufort Sea by whales and
15 birds occur in May and June when the impact of an oil
16 well blowout would be greatest. 5,000 beluga whales
17 and several hundreds of bowhead whales push through
18 the leads and cracks of the transition zone in late
19 April through to June. They feed on the concentrations
20 of Arctic cod and macro-invertebrates which are
21 attracted to the leads by increased light and food.
22 Beluga time their arrival for calving in Shallow
23 and Kugmallit Bays, and rely on the early spring
24 food supply to prepare them for their month-long fast
25 in estuarine waters. The modes of oil interaction
26 with whales are unknown. Possibly a local depletion of
27 white whales' food in a network of leads along the
28 mainland coast could alter the health of pregnant cows
29 and subsequently the success of the year's calving.
30 The presence of an oil slick contaminating the leads

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 can complicate the whales' freedom to manoeuver and
2 delay their arrival in the calving grounds. A loss
3 of an entire year's calves either from short-term
4 human disturbances or by natural causes would be of
5 moderate significance to the population. To the Inuit
6 who depend on the white whales' presence in Kugmallit
7 and Shallow Bays for income and recreation of the
8 annual hunt, any displacement from traditional calving
9 grounds would be unfortunate. It is clear, however,
10 that oil from a blowout at either Canmar site is likely
11 to greet large numbers of whales moving in leads; for
12 example, 1,500 whales were observed in a polynya
13 25 kilometers north of Toker Point (or about 35
14 kilometers south of Canmar site No. 1) in July '74.
15 The prevailing ice conditions of the transition zone
16 blowout will dictate the degree to which migrating
17 whales would be exposed to oil.

18 Migrating sea birds will
19 die in large numbers if oil, almost regardless of its
20 type, quantity and state of weathering, is encountered
21 in the transition zone. Several million sea birds,
22 geese and shore birds migrate eastward along the
23 mainland coast during May and June. The leads along the
24 edge of the landfast ice are particularly important;
25 here the diving birds such as oldsquaws and eiders
26 comprising as much as 90% of the entire offshore bird
27 migrants, can rest and then feed on the benthic and
28 nektonic fishes and invertebrates found in shallow
29 continental shelf waters. Often the birds search at
30 high elevations for patches of open water, including

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 surface melt ponds when leads are scarce. Open water
2 attracts most birds which have been observed to change
3 their intended direction of flight to light. Oil-
4 contaminated leads, open water and melt ponds appear
5 to attract diving birds, if the oil is in sufficient
6 quantities to calm the water surface. Since very
7 small quantities of oil, often a few drops, can destroy
8 the birds' thermal protection and waterproofing,
9 the kill of sea birds could be very great. The
10 ecological significance of the resulting kill, possibly
11 15% or more of the entire sea bird population, would
12 not be disastrous over the long term. This assumes
13 a no population depletions occurred during the earlier
14 migration along the Alaskan and Yukon coasts, that
15 there would be little additional mortality of nesting,
16 feeding, staging, and moulting birds, and that there
17 would only be localized short-lived pollution of the
18 barrier beaches and coastal bays, river estuaries, etc.

19 These are poor assumptions.

20 The hypothetical blowout as viewed on May 5, as was
21 shown on the diagram before, could contaminate the
22 leads and ice of the transition zone with an estimated
23 25,000 cubic meters of oil spread as far west as the
24 Alaskan mainland. The American coastal barrier beaches
25 and lagoons are extremely crucial resting and feeding
26 stops for migrating birds. Large numbers of eiders,
27 oldsquaws, loons and gulls would have further chances of
28 encountering polluted melt ponds on the ice surface,
29 and along portions of the mainland coast such as Rich-
30 ards Island, Tuk Peninsula, and the Yukon coast which

Shearer, Milne, Lewis,
In Chief

1 will be polluted with oil, especially during the open
2 water season of 1977.

3 In 1964 (that's 11 years ago)
4 a 10% natural kill of migrating birds was reported
5 along the Yukon coast. That was a heavy ice year,
6 '64. An estimated 100,000 eiders and other diving birds
7 starved when the leads of the transition zone closed
8 and refroze. Such a high natural mortality may not be
9 common, however bird populations appear to recover quick-
10 ly provided the lead habitats are available in subsequent
11 years. If a large reduction in birds were to occur
12 during the 1977 spring migration, the population could
13 probably recover, if staging, feeding and breeding
14 habitats are protected. The transition zone would be
15 free -- oil free in the following years, assuming that
16 a relief well successfully quenches the blowout in 1977.
17 If there is a heavy ice year, such as in 1974, and a
18 drill ship is not able to return to the blowout site,
19 the wildlife mortality would be several times greater.

20 We now go on into the summer
21 following the assumed blowout, this would be the summer
22 of 1977, the months of July through to September.

23 During the summer the hypo-
24 thetical blowout of 1976 could contaminate 400 kilometers
25 of mainland coast with the partially weathered remnants
26 of 3,800 cubic meters of oil. The barrier beaches,
27 sandspits, lagoons and bays of Richards Island, Tuk
28 Peninsula and to a lesser degree, parts of the Yukon
29 coast, would be most directly affected. Colonial
30 nesting birds such as terns and gulls as well as some

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 shore birds, could be affected by oil fouling nesting
2 sites. Many other bird species could be oiled during
3 marine feeding forays in the nesting phase. Later
4 from mid-July to late August many birds seek protection
5 in coastal waters during the moult period. A general
6 movement of birds occurs from freshwater lakes where they
7 nested and raised young, to these coastal bays. This
8 movement, that is during August, is likely connected
9 with the moulting of flight-feathers, as a result tens
10 of thousands of flightless oldsquaws, scoters, scaups,
11 mergansers, and other species are concentrated in lagoons
12 and other sheltered areas behind barrier beaches,
13 especially along Tuk Peninsula.

14 Swans and geese which nest
15 in river mouths, estuaries and salt marshes, may suffer
16 long-term damage to their nesting and feeding sites.
17 Inundations from storm surges and high river water
18 levels occasionally flood nests and drown young.
19 Oil carried inshore in concert with a storm surge would
20 not only eliminate the annual production of young, but
21 could also pollute nesting sites in successive years.
22 Chronic damage to vital nesting areas could significant-
23 ly delay the recovery of bird populations following
24 offshore kills.

25 Fall staging is another cri-
26 tical time for shore birds, geese, brant, oldsquaws,
27 scoters and scaups. These birds concentrate in
28 traditional coastal habitat, particularly along the
29 Yukon coast from Shallow Bay to the Blow River. Their
30 staging areas are usually coastal marshes which are

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

frequently water-covered each summer and offer nutritious sedges and grasses for birds prior to their migration southward. Snow geese, for example, gain up to one-quarter of their body weight during staging, in preparation for long-distance flights over unproductive taiga. Brant are even more dependent on coastal littoral zone for their diet of aquatic plants. Oil which contaminates shoreline and lagoon vegetation could be redeposited in bottom sediments, thus affecting long-term plant productivity and benthic invertebrate foods. Oil could even be directly ingested by grazing swans and geese in search of roots and bulblets.

During the peak of the summer insect season, large herds of caribou and reindeer retreat to the Beaufort Sea coast, including Richards Island and Tuk Peninsula. The onshore winds of the Arctic coast reduce the severity of insect attacks, but more often the animals wade and swim in near-shore waters and bays seeking relief. It is probable that these large ungulates could encounter floating oil along the mainland coast and protected bays, however the effect of such encounters is unknown.

Oil contamination of the near-shore waters in the outer Mackenzie Delta is probable during the whale calving season; strong north-east winds can drive the oil slick against the river flow and eventually inshore. An oil spill in open water could presumably be avoided by these animals, as apparently occurred with migratory gray whales off Santa Barbara, California. Since whales apparently do not feed in

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 river plume waters, any depletion of summer fish
2 stocks or benthic organisms by inshore oil pollution
3 would likely go unnoticed by beluga. If the whales
4 are forced to leave the contaminated part of the
5 estuary, this interruption could reduce the survival
6 rate of calves for that season. The subsequent recovery
7 of the population may only be a matter of years. More
8 harmful to white whales than oil pollution may be the
9 future levels of summer noise and activity from
10 machinery, ship and aircraft. If focussed in Shallow
11 and Kugmallit Bays, the whales could be forced into
12 less suitable calving grounds.

13 In summer, the ringed and
14 bearded seals are scattered along the mainland coast
15 offshore and near Banks Island. Oil slicks could
16 easily be avoided by these animals. Although their
17 food habits are varied, the coastal bays and lagoons
18 east of Cape Bathurst are common feeding sites. If
19 heavily polluted with oil, these productive waters
20 containing benthos and fishes could be rendered
21 useless to seals. Franklin Bay, for example, south-
22 east of Baillie Island, seems to be a nursery for a
23 large decapod crustaceans. These invertebrates are
24 important in the bioeconomics of the Arctic as they are
25 part of the food of the beluga whales, sea birds and
26 fishes, as well as the seals. The decapods themselves
27 feed on phytobenthos, detritus and small crustaceans,
28 forming a close link to the primary part of the marine
29 food chain.

30 Now I'm just switching over

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 here to the middle of page 2, the value of
2 marine Arctic wildlife to humans. The values.

3 It is clear that the economic
4 value in absolute terms of the harvest of fish and
5 wildlife resources in the Beaufort Sea is very small
6 indeed when compared with the expenditures involved in
7 oil exploration or with the value of resources which
8 it is hoped will be revealed by this exploration. On
9 the other hand, it is also clear that to the people
10 involved these resources have a meaning and importance
11 which greatly exceeds their economic value. The same
12 can probably be said of the importance of the birds to
13 the people in Southern Canada and the United States.
14 The significance of the effects of an oil spill on
15 these fish and wildlife populations therefore depends
16 very strongly upon subjective value judgments, and
17 is not easily quantified.

18 I just go into the conclusions
19 which repeat those which have been made in the beginning
20 but are in more detail.

21 Extensive drilling operations
22 in the Beaufort Sea will have substantial environmental
23 and sociological impacts whether or not any major
24 polluting incident occurs. The situation will have to
25 be examined and dealt with by other appropriate
26 authorities as it evolves. However, the drilling of
27 two holes in the summer of 1976, which is the subject
28 of immediate urgent concern, will not produce a
29 sufficiently large increase of activity in the Beaufort
30 Sea that a major impact will result, unless an oil

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 blowout should occur. Therefore attention is focused
2 on that possibility.

3 Probability of an oil
4 blowout in the summer of 1976. It is very difficult
5 to ascertain the probability of a blowout, since the
6 number of offshore blowouts worldwide which produce
7 substantial oil pollution has been too small to produce
8 a satisfactory statistical base, and the particular
9 conditions in the Beaufort Sea are unusual. Neverthe-
10 less, on the basis of information given by represen-
11 tatives of the industry and by DINA and DEMR, the
12 probability of an oil or an oil and gas well blowout
13 is judged to be in the range of 1/1,000 to 1/10,000
14 for each well drilled. This doesn't say anything
15 about the cumulative probability.

16 Environmental threat from
17 a blowout at proposed 1976 --

18 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse
19 me, sorry, Dr. Milne. Just that last remark of
20 yours, you said,

21 "The probability of an oil or oil and gas
22 well blowout is judged to be in the range
23 of ten to the third power, I suppose that is,
24 and so on for each well drilled. "

25 That is if you take each well, as if no well had ever
26 been drilled or no other well would ever be drilled,
27 that's what you come up with?

28 A Yes, that's correct.
29 I think one can view the situation that suppose ten
30 wells were drilled simultaneously, and the probability

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 of blowout was one in 5,000 , then the probability of
2 a blowout if ten were drilled would be quite -- would
3 be much higher.

4 Q So that while the
5 probability for each well drilled, the probability of
6 a blowout for each well drilled is one in somewhere
7 between one in a thousand, and one in 10,000, you
8 should multiply by -- well, that figure should be
9 multiplied according to the number of wells drilled
10 at any given point to determine the probability.

11 A Yes.

12 Q In other words, if
13 you're looking ahead and say to yourself, "we're going
14 to drill ten instead of two," you would multiply this
15 figure by ten. Am I doing this right?

16 A Yes, I think that's
17 essentially correct. Also I've said earlier on, that
18 if one assumes there's a higher probability in the
19 beginning because of assumptions about lack of exper-
20 ience or maybe other assumptions we can make, then
21 possibly the cumulative probability could be countered
22 by increased experience. Again these are all assumptions.

23 Q Yes. Well no, I was just
24 looking at the mathematical side of it. You made that
25 point earlier on that the experience gained might
26 offset the increase in probability owing to the
27 greater numbers of wells drilled.

28 A Correct, yes.

29 Q Sorry, carry on, please.

30 A So just looking at the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 environmental threat from a blowout at proposed 1976
2 drilling sites, that's just the second paragraph on
3 page 23, it is unlikely that the oil discharged into
4 the Beaufort Sea from a single oil well blowout running
5 for several years would have any effect whatever on
6 global or even local climate. Hence the main environ-
7 mental threat is to the biota of the Beaufort Sea region.
8 Both of the Canmar drilling sites are in the
9 transition zone where winter ice is subject to move-
10 ment of the order of kilometers per day, and where leads
11 open, freeze over, and close throughout the winter in a
12 manner which is not predictable in detail.

13 Canmar Site No. 1 is posi-
14 tioned in the transition zone where a blowout is com-
15 paratively most damaging to plant and animal life be-
16 cause of the likelihood of winter and spring pollution
17 of the active leads north of the mainland fast ice.

18 Canmar Site No. 2 , this is
19 further north, is located in the transition zone where
20 a blowout is marginally less damaging to overwintering
21 wildlife since much of the winter oil discharge will
22 be dispersed under the ice, at least until spring.

23 For comparison, a scenario
24 was developed for a hypothetical site No. 3 to
25 reveal the effects of a blowout from a well drilled
26 nearer shore where the ice is landfast in the winter.
27 This scenario showed that a blowout is comparatively
28 least damaging to overwintering marine mammals and
29 spring migrants, assuming that burning at the blowout
30 site is effective in the spring.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 Drilling a relief well in
2 1977. The environmental threat ratings assume that the
3 imaginary oil and gas blowout is controlled by drilling
4 a relief well before October, 1977. This may not be
5 possible since the 1977 ice year may be heavy and the
6 subsequent open water season may be short. It is not
7 possible usefully to predict the likelihood of light
8 or heavy ice years. A blowout site can be continually
9 ice-covered or ice-infested. This is more probable
10 at Canmar Site No. 2 than at site No. 1, and less
11 likely at the landfast site No. 3.

12 Considerations affecting
13 the escape of oil into the environment. Available
14 technology is severely limited in its capability of
15 mitigating the threat to the environment arising from
16 the loss of control of an offshore oil well, parti-
17 cularly in the Beaufort Sea transition zone. Unless
18 a blowout were self-sealing, damage from released oil
19 could only be prevented in one of three ways:

- 20 (a) The flow can be stopped by the drilling of a
21 suitable relief well.
22 (b) The oil could be contained at or near the bottom.
23 (c) The oil could be contained or disposed of after
24 it has reached the surface.

25 At present no technology
26 exists for drilling a relief well in the Beaufort
27 Sea transition zone except during the brief summer
28 open water period. In some years no suitable open
29 water period occurs.

30 There exists no technology

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 for containing the oil near the bottom, which is suit-
2 able for controlling escaping oil and gas in the Beau-
3 fort Sea transition zone.

4 Contamination and disposal
5 of oil at the surface is possible under certain limited
6 circumstances. However, existing --

7 MR. BAYLY: Contamination or
8 containment?

9 A Containment, I'm sorry.
10 I'll read that again.

11 Containment and disposal of
12 oil at the surface is possible under certain limited
13 circumstances. However, existing technology is known
14 to fail in modest sea states and wind states such as
15 occur for 55 to 60% of the time during the summer in
16 the Beaufort Sea. According to scenarios developed
17 in the Beaufort Sea project, existing technology is
18 unlikely to be successful in disposing of a large-
19 fraction of the oil which escapes during the winter
20 period of moving ice.

21 The environmental prediction
22 system which will be in place in the Beaufort Sea
23 during 1976 and 1977 will not be sufficiently complete
24 to permit prediction of the movement of escaped
25 oil as accurate as is allowed by the state of the art.
26 Thus the deployment of devices such as booms for the
27 protection of especially vulnerable areas will be less
28 efficient than is technologically possible.

29 Oil spill counter-measures
30 in 1977. When I say "Oil spill counter-measures" I

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 am really referring to surface -- oil that is now on
2 the surface or under the ice.

3 Canmar has endeavored to
4 assemble equipment and develop methods to mitigate
5 damage of oil pollution from a blowout. However, the
6 harsh Arctic conditions place severe constraints on
7 the effectiveness of cleanup activities in 1976. New
8 technologies adapted to Arctic marine waters are in
9 embryonic stages of development. As a consequence of
10 an imaginary blowout on the 5th of October, 1976,
11 and assuming a standard blowout (based on information
12 received from the industry) in which the initial flow
13 is 2,500 barrels per day, reducing in a month to 1,500
14 a day, and then continuing at that rate until the well
15 is brought under control, it is concluded that:

16 - Most of the oil discharged from October, 1976
17 to early July, that is the summer of the following
18 year in '77, will escape containment and disposal at
19 both Canmar sites. Approximately 25,000 cubic meters
20 of oil will be mixed with the ice and water of the
21 transition zone. Spring burning will only have limited
22 success. Spring burning of the oil might, on the
23 other hand, be very effective for a blowout occurring
24 on landfast ice regions.

25 - 55 to 60% of the 21,000 cubic meters of oil
26 discharged from July '77 to October '77, that is during
27 the open water period of the subsequent year, and the
28 assumed month of well control, would be likely to
29 escape containment and disposal at either Canmar site.
30 That is the bulk of it would likely escape containment.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 Of the total amount of oil blown by winds towards
2 the coast lines, inshore oil spill counter-measures
3 are unlikely to eliminate more than 5%. On the other
4 hand, where protection of specific bays and lagoons
5 is sought, counter-measures would be effective for
6 at least 45% of the summer.

7 - Oil spill counter-measures proposed for 1977
8 are not likely to decrease significantly the estimates
9 of environmental impact of an oil and gas blowout
10 occurring at either Canmar site.

11 This is the last summing up.
12 The threats of a blowout to the Arctic marine food
13 chain. An autumn oil well blowout at either Canmar
14 site, but more so from site No. 1, just north of the
15 landfast ice zone, could pollute active leads and
16 open water in the ice of the transition zone through
17 the winter and spring. Assuming the blowout is con-
18 trolled within one year, the oiling of these active
19 leads vital to the survival of marine mammals and
20 birds will be short-lived. By the winter of 1977-78
21 the oil will have been dispersed northward into the
22 Beaufort Gyre and southward to the inshore waters and
23 coastlines.

24 - It is predicted that primary production will
25 be inhibited where oil collects in the ice of the tran-
26 sition zone so that a localized depletion of fish
27 stocks, invertebrates and sub-ice algae will occur.
28 This depletion will have significance if it occurred
29 in the main east-west leads used for migration and in
30 zones of active shearing used by resident seal

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 populations. Seals, whales, and some marine fishes
2 and birds depend on the spring influx of food to recover
3 from a winter's fast, a migration or an annual moult.

4 - The predicted mortality of overwintering ringed
5 and bearded seals concentrated in the ice of the trans-
6 ition zone is not known. However, it is certain that a
7 large fraction of the sub-adult and adolescent seal
8 populations, perhaps 30% or more, in the south-eastern
9 Beaufort Sea will encounter oil.

10 - The predicted contamination of offshore leads
11 for at least one spring season and more chronic long-
12 lived pollution of the coastal bays and shorelines will
13 have the greatest impact on the bird life of the south-
14 eastern Beaufort Sea.

15 - Coastal fishes comprise other wildlife popula-
16 tions sensitive to oil pollution. The recovery from an
17 initial fish kill is predicted to be slow, perhaps
18 a decade, a result of the persistent toxicity of
19 oil in lagoon and embayment sediments.

20 It is evident that the
21 effects of an oil blowout could be severe on some
22 portions of the ecology and on some populations, parti-
23 cularly sea birds. However, none of these effects is
24 likely to be irreversible, although recovery might
25 take as long as a decade in some cases. Except for
26 birds, the economic values of marine wildlife resources
27 ^{threatened} is of the order of tens of thousands of dollars per
28 annum which is very small compared with the magnitude
29 of the investment in the oil industry. Various estimates
30 have been made of the economic values of migratory

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
In Chief

1 birds as a renewable continental resource, in the order
2 of millions of dollars per annum. The economic valua-
3 tions of birds are exceedingly difficult to make on
4 a sound basis, but the birds are visible throughout
5 the continental flyways and are a substantial
6 recreational resource, having a high social and indirec-
7 tly a high economic value. Even so, the importance of
8 these consequences will have to be judged on largely
9 sociological and environmental grounds, not economic
10 ones.

11 That ends the testimony.

12 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner,
13 this panel is now available for cross-examination.

14 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF J. SHEARER MARKED
15 EXHIBIT 466)

16 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF C.P. LEWIS MARKED
17 EXHIBIT 467)

18 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF A.R. MILNE MARKED
19 EXHIBIT 468)

20 MR. GOUDGE: I take it, sir,
21 that Mr. Bayly would prefer us to go through the
22 batting order in relation to Mr. Milne, if possible.
23 I canvassed counsel and I think it's probably unlikely
24 we could finish him today, but --

25 MR. BAYLY: If that is
26 possible I think it's perhaps worth a try anyway, Mr.
27 Commissioner. If not, I've discussed it with Mr.
28 Milne and we can bring him back, but probably not until
29 late Monday of next week.

30 MR. GOUDGE: Perhaps then, sir,

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 I could suggest that we begin by going through the
2 batting order as far as Mr. Milne is concerned,
3 except for Mr. Veale. When we reach him, since he is
4 only going to be here today, I'd suggest that he
5 be permitted to ask all his questions of all three
6 panelists.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: Right.

8 MR. MARSHALL: My understanding
9 is that I'm next to last in the batting order. If
10 Mr. Veale would like to start, perhaps that would be
11 the most sensible thing, sir.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: I think
13 so.

14
15 CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. VEALE:

16 Q Dr. Milne, I understand
17 your basic submission is there are substantial
18 environmental risks with offshore drilling in the
19 Beaufort Sea, and my question is: Are there any other
20 areas in the world where the risk that you speak of
21 is as substantial as it is in the Beaufort Sea?

22 WITNESS MILNE: In terms of
23 environmental risk I really have to respond as to what
24 are major differences and why one might surmise there
25 is more of an environmental risk in the Beaufort Sea.
26 If we -- and I think it's fair to say that the
27 probability of a blowout depends partly on the compet-
28 ency of the technical system and also on the people
29 who operate it, and it's very hard to differentiate
30 between that in the Beaufort Sea compared to elsewhere.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 So on that basis we can assume we start off on square
2 one in every area offshore. So what are the major
3 differences in potential/^{for} environmental impact? Those
4 primarily appear to be concerned with the time during
5 which a blowout has to be allowed to remain running out
6 of control. Since there is a very short drilling
7 season in the Beaufort Sea, sometimes virtually none,
8 depending on the site, and at most perhaps four months
9 in a good ice year, this means that for the remaining
10 eight months of the year there is no means of drilling
11 a relief well or bringing it under control. So one
12 is left with ten months or more of a free-running
13 oil well blowout, and that's the No. 1 difference,
14 because elsewhere in the world it is possible to
15 do something about it, even though it may be difficult,
16 at least there is a good possibility of getting back
17 during wintertime elsewhere offshore.

18 The No. 2 problem is the
19 higher life forms -- the mammals, the whales and the
20 sea birds -- want to occupy the same leads that the
21 oil will occupy. So there isn't the possibility of
22 the dispersal of the wildlife in the Beaufort Sea as
23 there is elsewhere. Also because of the concentration
24 of open water along the shores, and the likelihood of
25 oil getting inshore, they coincide again with where
26 the wildlife like to be. It's just where oil is,
27 that's where the wildlife is likely to be, more so
28 than in other parts of the world.

29 Q And I take it that if
30 you made a comparison of the Beaufort Sea with the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 Arctic Islands offshore drilling, for example, there
2 are also substantial differences in the ice conditions,
3 which would make the risk greater in the Beaufort Sea
4 than in the Arctic Islands.

5 A With regard to systems
6 which already have drilling authority in the archipelago,
7 these offshore ones have been on shorefast ice and
8 have been placed on thickened or built up pads of ice,
9 and since I believe that these are the offshore ones
10 are primarily gas wells, and the subsequent ones are
11 delineation gas wells, the situation has only been
12 permitted to go on if there is left time in the season
13 to drill a relief well from another ice pad. So it
14 means the construction of two pads and the possibility
15 of getting in there and doing something about it.
16 So in the archipelago we're looking at quite a differ-
17 ent situation than in the moving ice of the transition
18 zone using floating drill ships working in the open
19 water season, whereas in the archipelago they're
20 operating from landfast ice during the late winter-
21 early spring.

22 Q So it's then the condition
23 of the moving ice which can be isolated as the major
24 distinction then between those two regions.

25 A Distinction both on
26 season, of operation, and whether it's in fast ice
27 or moving ice.

28 Q And is there also a
29 distinction on age of ice?

30 A Not necessarily in the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 transition zone in describing the age of the ice, which
2 is in motion depends on the season. Sometimes it's
3 comprised of ice that has grown in one season and
4 other times is comprised of high percentages of older
5 thicker fresher ice.

6 Q Now I take it also that
7 in the Arctic Islands there has been drilling taking
8 place during the winter period -- the winter season --
9 as well as the summer season.

10 A Offshore in the Arctic
11 Islands in my knowledge -- to my knowledge the only
12 offshore drilling has occurred in the winter and spring
13 from ice thickened pads built up in the shorefast and
14 landfast ice from a stable motionless platform for
15 practical purposes.

16 Q And that type of drilling
17 cannot take place in the Beaufort Sea area.

18 A That's true. The only
19 equivalency we have there is from the artificial
20 islands which are again in very shallow water and
21 are year- round operations. That's the only thing
22 anywhere near that has any similarity whatsoever.

23 Q Now, you've --

24 THE COMMISSIONER: And you said
25 that in the Arctic Islands they are obliged to cease
26 drilling in any season while there's still time to drill
27 a relief well.

28 A Yes, there is provision
29 -- also these wells, I understand, are limited in
30 depth to permit a relief well to be drilled before

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 the season ends, or before the landfast ice breaks up.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

3 MR. VEALE: Q Dr. Milne, you've
4 also spoken about the --

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me.

6 In the
/Beaufort Sea, that kind of provision would exclude
7 open water drilling in the summer completely.

8 A Not necessarily. I
9 think it would probably be a lot less economic, but
10 there are two -- a minimum of two drilling systems
11 going in and I think it is possible to devise, you
12 know, as an amateur myself, to devise in the absence
13 of good engineering information, a scheme whereby
14 a relief well could be done, but it would be -- the
15 shorter the drilling season then the less viable the
16 proposition becomes from an industrial point of view,
17 because one would have to terminate operations early
18 enough in the season to permit a relief well, the
19 continuation of a companion well which would act as
20 a relief well, and this would occupy a large fraction
21 of the season that would be left.

22 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes.

23 MR. VEALE: Q Dr. Milne, you
24 also spoke about the length of time for recuperation
25 of wildlife and fish stocks, and with respect to fish
26 stock you had mentioned that recuperation could take
27 up to a decade. Now, does that assume that there
28 would be no fishing of that particular fish stock in
29 order for that recuperation to take place?

30 A First, I'm not a biologist

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 -- my field is physics and geophysics, so I can't
2 speak with any authority on this matter. But in our
3 exploration of, during the production of the assessment
4 Brian Smiley, who was the co-author, is a biologist
5 and consulted with the fisheries people on the project
6 who were on this panel the other day, and we endeavored
7 to extract from these people their considered guesses
8 as to what they thought. We attempted to pin them to
9 the wall as hard as possible to come up with guesses
10 as to what they thought might happen, and the results
11 are displayed in the document or in the testimony.

12 Q Well, I may be pursuing
13 an area where you don't wish to answer, but if we
14 take, you know, that the whales and the seals and
15 that type of animal, it seemed to me to be patently
16 obvious that if there were great hunting in the recup-
17 eration period, it would obviously have a greater delay
18 in terms of the recuperation that you're anticipating.

19 A Yes, I believe what you're
20 alluding to is the fact that if there is already
21 stressed biological systems, either from natural
22 causes or from hunting pressure, each additional stress
23 is bound to reduce the viability of that population.
24 I don't think I can go very much beyond that in response
25 to what you said.

26 Q But when you talk about
27 burning off oil in the cleanup process, you spoke of
28 the month of May. Now, does that create problems for
29 the, environmental problems, in the burnoff at that
30 particular time of year?

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 A Gee, in the actual
2 buring off operation itself, I wouldn't think that
3 that would be very significant. It would probably have
4 a very marginal side benefit of keeping some of the
5 birds away from the immediate area (that was being
6 burned off; but other than that I can't envisage any
7 environmental damage caused by an offshore burning
8 operation on the sea ice, of oil that is emerging
9 at its surface.

10 Q Would you agree that
11 it's a difficult season in which to conduct the actual
12 operation because of flying problems relating to
13 weather particularly?

14 A Yes, it is difficult,
15 not just the operation itself but the logistics support
16 which would be required to have significant effective-
17 ness. You know, if you had good weather, then I
18 believe you would need -- this is directly from
19 Canmar -- you would need some 40 helicopters and you
20 would have to have fuel shipped up from the south,
21 100,000 barrels of fuel to -- for the helicopters to
22 use. You would have to deploy some 40-odd people in
23 order to man the helicopters and do the burnoff opera-
24 tion. Now when you add those logistic problems to
25 what I consider to be the effectiveness of doing it,
26 and which involves the location of where the oil is
27 and it's scattered all over the place. I really think
28 it's a marginally effective operation, as far as
29 environmental impact is concerned. Supposing you
30 burn off 50% of it, get rid of that, you're still

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 left with that margin that is left when the weather
2 is bad. So from an environmental impact significance
3 I really don't believe it would -- this is certainly
4 not effective, in my opinion.

5 Q Thank you, Dr. Milne.

6 Mr. Lewis, I understand, my understanding of your evidence
7 is that the onshore facilities required to support
8 drilling and so on offshore in the Beaufort Sea is
9 the greatest problem, particularly concerning, for
10 example, the possible harbor that would be constructed
11 along the North Coast of the Yukon Territory. Is that
12 correct?

13 WITNESS LEWIS: Well, speaking
14 I think, both of the facilities associated with
15 drilling of wells and with the facilities associated
16 with production from the wells in the sense of pipelines,
17 feeder lines from offshore, processing plants onshore,
18 and further lines from there into the trunk pipeline.

19 Q Well, dealing specifically
20 with Babbage Bight, I understand from your previous
21 evidence that there is a -- that is the proposed site
22 of a harbor, and I understand that it is the best
23 site for the particular water depth that is required.
24 You indicated this morning in your evidence that there
25 were some difficulties with / Babbage Bight as a site. Would you elaborate on that?

26
27 A To my knowledge I don't
28 know that Babbage Bite is a proposed site. It is a
29 site whose feasibility as a port has been investigated
30 by the Federal Department of Public Works in a study

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 which also examined other sites. For example Herschel
2 Island, and the conclusion of that feasibility study
3 was that the only possible location for a deep water
4 port along the Beaufort sea coast was Babbage Bight, and
5 I believe by "deep water port" they meant a port in
6 which vessels with draughts up ^{to} /76 feet could enter.

7 Now with respect to the question
8 there is no doubt that Babbage Bight has by far the
9 steepest offshore gradient of any location along the
10 Beaufort Sea coast, so ships could get in. But as I
11 said this morning, it is a rapidly retreating vertical
12 cliff coastline with large amounts of massive ground
13 ice in it with rapid slumping, with these ground ice
14 slumps that I talked about melting back, and so any
15 facilities associated with the harbour which were on
16 land would come into contact with a very sensitive
17 area.

18 Q I also understand that
19 at some time or other -- I don't know whether this was
20 a proposal or just a feasibility study -- but the
21 gas producer (and I think it was Imperial Oil) was
22 considering the location -- considering locating a
23 concrete aggregate plant at that particular site to
24 support the offshore drilling that they might conduct.
25 Are you aware of that particular proposal, whatever
26 the status of it is?

27 A I'm aware of it to the
28 extent that about a year ago a document was sent to me
29 from the Department of Indian Affairs to review a
30 proposal that Imperial Oil had submitted. I don't know

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Veale

1 exactly what kind of proposal it was, whether -- I
2 don't believe it was actually an application; but I
3 was asked to review a proposal for the establishment
4 of a shallow water harbour. I think they were concerned
5 with vessels whose draughts would be up to 16 feet, for
6 the establishment also of a concrete aggregate plant,
7 of an airstrip big enough to land Hercules aircraft
8 on, and a road extending from Babbage Bight to the
9 mountains south-west about 30 miles from Babbage Bight
10 where they would mine the material, bring it to the
11 aggregate plant, and in combination with material
12 available locally around the aggregate plant to make
13 large blocks to use on artificial islands.

14 Q Well, without getting
15 into a discussion of cumulative impact of having a
16 harbor and say the plant established there, from your
17 discipline is there any difficulty with establishing
18 a concrete aggregate plant at that site?

19 A I think yes, and for
20 very similar reasons to the problems of port. There
21 have been -- I've already talked about the actual
22 coastline itself behind the coast in the area where
23 they're talking about having the plant and the strip
24 and the road. I have looked at logs of seismic
25 shock wells drilled in the area, and from those logs
26 which I must admit, and I think everyone knows are
27 notoriously unreliable, but from those logs it appears
28 as if that entire area is underlain by a large amount
29 of massive ice. I think probably as much massive ice
30 as you would find anywhere along the whole Beaufort

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
~~Cross-Exam by Veale~~
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 Sea coast.

2 Q And that, I take it,
3 means a certain degree of instability.

4 A That means problems.

5 MR. VEALE: I see. I have no
6 further questions, Mr. Commissioner.

7
8 CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. EVANS:

9 Q Mr. Milne, I'd like to
10 refer you to the paper you delivered to the Canadian
11 Society of Petroleum Geologists, I believe at Calgary,
12 the 2nd of October, 1974, entitled:

13 "Beaufort Sea and Mackenzie River Delta
14 Environmental Studies."

15 In that paper you made a statement that,

16 "The Beaufort Sea project is a crash catch-up
17 program which cannot by itself provide full
18 and detailed information on this remote, hostile,
19 ecologically sensitive region."

20 Now, I wondered what kind of -- from your experience
21 as manager of the Beaufort Sea project, what kind of
22 project do you think would provide adequate informa-
23 tion? What kind of a continuing research project?

24 WITNESS MILNE: All right,
25 what I believe you're asking is what kind of a project
26 would -- how many years could we go on and provide
27 a significant addition to the information we already
28 have? Is that --

29 Q Yes.

30 A I think maybe I should

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 just review very quickly the content of the Technical
2 Reports which will be coming out from the Beaufort Sea
3 project. Incidentally, there are some 15 of these which
4 will shortly be available. Some are immediately avail-
5 able, about six. Most of the -- in fact all of the
6 major investigators have been government scientists
7 for a number of years, and almost all of them have
8 worked in the Arctic for a good many years, some for
9 as much as 20 years, and it is clear that there has
10 been a great in-gathering of pertinent information
11 applicable to the Beaufort Sea which will emerge from
12 the Technical Reports in the Beaufort Sea project, and
13 which I believe there has been summarized with reason-
14 able accuracy in the preliminary assessment. So what
15 does that leave us with? It leaves^{us} with as much as
16 20 years of back thoughts, considerations and data
17 which has provided -- will be provided by the time the
18 project is completed. So to add a significant amount
19 of data to what has already been divulged or will be
20 divulged at the end of the project, really has to be
21 looked at in terms of the revelations or the revealing
22 of gaps and what can be done with regard to those.

23 For example, do the -- does
24 the beluga population consist of two separate populations,
25 one that comes from the east and one that comes from
26 the west? This would obviously have significance on
27 future offshore activities in understanding what the
28 impact might be. It is evident also that there is
29 little knowledge of offshore fisheries in the Beaufort
30 Sea simply because over all this long period of time

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 the direction in which the fisheries operations and
2 research people have been conducting themselves hasn't
3 been toward determining what these populations are.
4 Instead they've been doing largely what was logistically
5 possible, so here is another area where not many years
6 of work, say several years of work would add a
7 significant body of data to what is already known.

8 I think I'll just leave it
9 at that and maybe you would like to enlarge on it with
10 other questions.

11 Q The point that I'm trying
12 to make is a very simple one, and that is until your
13 project we knew almost nothing about the Beaufort
14 Sea and we still really know comparatively very little,
15 and would you agree that much more research is neces-
16 sary in order to provide sufficient baseline data in
17 order to deal with the area effectively. Would you
18 agree with that statement?

19 A I agree that in certain
20 areas there is a lot more work which would render
21 you know, the kind of -- I think the essential problem
22 in the Beaufort Sea is the recovery period of the
23 wildlife populations following some kind of stress,
24 like an oil well blowout, and if one can add some
25 more precision to this period assumed for ecological
26 cover, recovery, well here is where the research should
27 be concentrated. On matters connected with bottom
28 scouring, with sub-sea permafrost, with the knowledge
29 of the sea ice cover and its motions, I think for the
30 purposes of assessing environmental impact and the

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 precision with which it could be done, these studies
2 were probably adequate for the purpose at this time.

3 Q Now, on page 23 of your
4 prepared evidence that you've given today, you stated

5 "It is unlikely that oil discharged into the
6 Beaufort Sea from a single oil well blowout
7 running for several years would have any effect
8 whatever on global or even local climate."

9 In that same paper that I referred you to earlier
10 you discussed the quite possible climatic effects and
11 at that time you seemed to draw a somewhat different
12 conclusion. You stated in part,

13 "If large areas were affected, the ice cover
14 could irreversibly disappear, resulting in a
15 serious alteration in the world's climate,
16 perhaps even a new Ice Age."

17 I wonder if you'd like to comment on that? Did some
18 things --

19 THE COMMISSIONER: Who said
20 that?

21 MR. EVANS: Mr. Milne said
22 that in a paper that he delivered in October of 1974.

23 THE COMMISSIONER: That's the
24 petroleum --

25 MR. EVANS: That's correct.
26 I just wondered if you appear to have changed your
27 idea, your feelings somewhat, and I wondered if this
28 was due to some information you gained through your
29 research project?

30 A I think in that paper I

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 referred to or alluded to that it was the opinion
2 that this was a possibility, and I think that's how
3 it went. I've forgotten the exact words. This was a
4 worldwide concern, and the background there is there
5 had been several papers in the literature referring
6 to this possibility and that had to be responded to.

7 Q Yes, you refer --

8 A That's the essence of
9 it.

10 THE COMMISSIONER: You had to
11 consider that in your study.

12 A Yes, that was a consider-
13 ation. All right, what is the situation now and how
14 did I arrive at this wild statement?

15 MR. EVANS: Q Perhaps I
16 can add to that, Mr. Milne. You referred to a paper
17 by Campbell & Martin where they alluded to this
18 possibility, and then a rebuttal by, I believe, Ayers,
19 Johns & Glaeser.

20 A Glaeser.

21 Q I wondered if you could,
22 you know, comment on how your project handled this
23 question and how you drew your conclusions as stated
24 today?

25 A If
26 /I just go back to the
27 Campbell & Martin paper, there were a number of
28 assumptions made in that paper based on -- well, on
29 the lack of knowledge of ice in the Beaufort Sea and
30 how oil, particularly with regard to how oil would
interact with sea ice. In the Beaufort Sea project we

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 undertook to do a number of experiments to try to
2 ascertain just what would be the actual interaction
3 as much as possible of oil in sea ice. Now, the
4 Campbell & Martin paper really referred to a proposi-
5 tion that the oil, once it got in the polar pack ice,
6 or under the polar ice, would take several years to
7 emerge on the surface and therefore it would in a
8 sense be ^{encapsulated} or preserved as it circulated in
9 the Arctic Ocean. It also made certain assumptions
10 about how it would spread, but it did not deal with
11 the problem of biological decay of the oil or with its
12 eventual chemical fate or biological fate, if you
13 like. It also made assumptions about spreading of a
14 certain amount of oil with regard to -- well, how
15 much area it would cover, and therefore how much area
16 it would influence. Would it be a monomolecular layer
17 of oil, or would it have some, ~~be~~ concentrated by the
18 sea ice itself and therefore only cover a very small
19 area? So all these factors were of importance to
20 investigate and these had been investigated to a large
21 extent, where possible, in the Beaufort Sea project
22 with the exception of actually contaminating offshore
23 areas with oil, and from these studies it has been
24 pretty clear that for a blowout running for one or
25 two years from one well, that the amount of oil and
26 its ultimate fate would have relatively little
27 significance as far as the depletion of the percentage
28 of the ice cover in the Beaufort Sea relative to the
29 depletion which is caused by natural climatic variations.
30 In other words, you see big open areas in which are

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 far, far more significant in affecting climate than
2 would be a small area depleted or decayed by having
3 incorporated oil.

4 THE COMMISSIONER: The
5 sheer physical volume of oil is insufficient when its
6 dispersal is not widespread enough to make a difference.

7 A Yes, it's also coupled
8 with the fact, "Well, what is its ultimate fate from
9 its pristine form when it emerges out of the well
10 to what it ultimately might become after a while." So
11 one situation says it's untrapped in the ice and
12 therefore it emerges and is spread very thinly; in
13 actual fact in my opinion -- not fact, but my opinion
14 the oil will emerge to the surface almost entirely
15 in the first year. In the following summer it will be
16 subject to atmospheric effects, evaporation, decay,
17 concentration and the tar balls, some of which will
18 be -- have a specific gravity greater than water and
19 could sink to the bottom, and therefore in a
20 climatic -- from a climatic point of view would not
21 likely have much effect in the following years on
22 you know, the accumulative effect would disappear
23 rather rapidly. This is not to discount the possible
24 climatic effects which might occur from a continuation
25 of oil spills which might result from more wells
26 being drilled and offshore production, and production
27 spills and pipeline breaks. Now we're getting into
28 a different order of magnitude there and --

29 Q Precisely, and that in
30 a sense is the difference between the risk entailed

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 in the drilling of these two exploration wells and the
2 risk that we might face, given a proliferation of
3 exploration and production activity in the delta and
4 the Beaufort Sea. Do you remember, Dr. Milne, that
5 when the Prime Minister introduced the Arctic Waters
6 Pollution Prevention Act in the House of Commons prior
7 to the voyage of the "Manhattan" he referred to the
8 possibility that an oil spill in Arctic waters might
9 make -- might have some effect on the earth's climate
10 and no doubt in saying that he was advised that the
11 vast quantities of oil that would be spilled if a
12 tanker sunk in the Arctic would cause that impact.
13 Is the amount of oil you would be -- in a tanker the
14 size of the "Manhattan", and we appreciate that the
15 knowledge of these matters was probably more limited
16 when he spoke six years ago than it is today, but
17 is the volume of oil in a tanker greater than what
18 you would get issuing from a well for one year or
19 two years, or might that statement have been made
20 on the assumption that a tanker would sink in different
21 waters? Do you have any comment on that?

22 A I recall again from
23 memory that a blowout running for a year is about --
24 somebody could correct me on this -- I believe about
25 a third of a super tanker, and so we're dealing with
26 sort of the same order of magnitude of a spill, but
27 I might also comment that one of the studies of the
28 project also considers long-term effects and speculates
29 on how much oil might be spilled and what might happen
30 to it. It also concludes as well on a pessimistic note

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 that the state of knowledge of climatology is such that
2 one is not in a position to come up with an answer,
3 which is sort of a negative result.

4 Q Mr. Evans asked you about
5 the Beaufort Sea study project, and put to you the
6 words you used when you made that speech,

7 "Crash catchup,"
8 and your colleagues, Dr. Grainger and those on his
9 panel made it plain that they felt that our knowledge
10 of the Beaufort Sea is by no means complete as a result
11 of this study; but you, it seems to me, are satisfied
12 that the study has enabled you to assess the risk
13 so far as it can be assessed, of a blowout occurring
14 if these two wells were drilled this summer, and
15 you've outlined in great detail the likely environmental
16 damage that you feel would occur if the wells -- if
17 there were a blowout at one of these wells.

18 It appears to me, just
19 having listened to all of you, that while you don't
20 know all that there is to know about the Beaufort
21 Sea, you have made a determination that there is a
22 risk entailed in drilling these wells and that if
23 there is a blowout, damage will occur, damage which
24 you have described as widespread, and it will last
25 a considerable length of time. You're not doing a
26 report on the Beaufort Sea; you're doing a report on
27 the possible impact of an oil spill, and while you
28 may not have succeeded in the first endeavor, that
29 wasn't what you were asked to do and you appear, as
30 I understand your evidence, to feel you succeeded in

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 the latter endeavor. You don't know all the likely
2 impacts that oil will have on these marine organisms,
3 on the food chains, and even on the large mammals in
4 the sea, but you certainly appear to have gone a long
5 way toward adumbrating the consequences in a way that
6 enables the politicians who have to make these decisions
7 to decide whether the risk is acceptable or unacceptable.
8 Do you care to comment on that observation of mine,
9 because it's certainly my impression from what your
10 colleagues and you have said, that you have gone that
11 far.

12 A Yes. While you have been
13 saying that I've been thinking about a response, and
14 one of them goes something like this, that there are
15 many pathways in a narrative or a scenario that one
16 can take, and the precision with which a story can be
17 -- that a story might relate to reality is, you know,
18 you might never find out and --

19 Q You hope not to.

20 A -- you hope not to find
21 out. More research may reveal that the impact might
22 be higher, or it might reveal that the impact may be
23 lower. I think we tend to err on the pessimistic
24 side and therefore the impact might be less, I really
25 don't know; but as we get further down in the food
26 chain in the more elementary parts of the food chain,
27 the more difficulty it is to say anything with pre-
28 cision and it is possible with more work to render
29 those estimates to be more precise. I don't know
30 whether I can say much more about it; than that at

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 the moment.

2 Q Well, at any rate you
3 said in your preliminary remarks that so far as the
4 oceanography of the Beaufort Sea and the movement of
5 the sea ice and the conditions of the sea and the
6 ice itself, the way they bear on your assessment of
7 the risk and the consequences, you were in a position
8 to know an awful lot about those factors, and they
9 appear to be in many respects the most important
10 factors because they limit the drilling of a relief
11 well, which you said is the principal concern, so far
12 as stopping the thing is concerned, and they also
13 enable you to discuss the open water, the leads forming
14 in the spring which -- to which the oil is drawn just
15 like the birds and the -- well, at least the whales
16 and the seals and well, the birds as well. So that
17 in those areas you appear to have pinned this thing
18 down so far as it is likely ever to be pinned down.

19 A If you don't mind, sir,
20 I'd like to make one comment which I think if one
21 doesn't know very much about an area it can over-
22 simplify the various paths or come up with one most
23 likely path and description of a scenario. In the
24 case of surface currents, for example, in the Southern
25 Beaufort Sea, it would be very nice to be able to
26 predict ahead of time, months ahead of time what the
27 surface currents are likely to be in the Southern
28 Beaufort Sea. However, from past data one simply has
29 an arrow on a map and that's, you know, that's as
30 much precision as you're going to get. The more

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 measurements that are done, the more we realize that
2 there are various other influences which increase in
3 number with the more measurements you make, and
4 therefore what is being revealed is a higher degree
5 of randomness than before. This may also occur with
6 wildlife studies which says that one year is completely
7 different from the next, and each subsequent year
8 you make measurements that's different from a
9 previous one. So one only can devise some mental
10 concept of a median or an average which is never
11 precisely likely to be reality.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, it's
13 a difficult business.

14 MR. GOUDGE: I wonder if
15 this would be an appropriate time to stop?

16 THE COMMISSIONER: I think
17 that I have some more questions or at least musings
18 on which I should like Dr. Milne to comment, and
19 I know Mr. Evans has more questions. Mr. Goudge has
20 some, and if it's -- if we can impose on Dr. Milne's
21 good nature to return on Monday, this is important
22 certainly to us and we would appreciate that. I --

23 MR. GOUDGE: If not Monday,
24 perhaps Tuesday.

25 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes,
26 whenever it is possible. It would be helpful if it
27 were next week if you could come.

28 MR. BAYLY: I have spoken to
29 Mr. Milne and it appears as though it may be possible
30 and we can discuss the logistics of that and see what

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 can be done.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: I wonder,
3 Dr. Milne, if you would -- Dr. Pimlott gave evidence
4 here a couple of weeks ago and he had some figures
5 on the experience of spills in the Gulf of Alaska and
6 other places of temperate waters, or at least not
7 the Beaufort Sea. You might, if you don't mind,
8 just reading over his paper on the plane going down
9 to Yellowknife or coming back here next week and comment,
10 if you wish, if you don't wish to that's your business,
11 but comment if you wish on the matters you've raised
12 regarding the probability of a spill, and anything
13 else in his paper relating to these issues. I don't
14 want your views on how the government makes decisions.

15 MR. BAYLY: I understand from
16 Dr. Pimlott that those statistics came out in cross-
17 examination but I'd be happy to get them together and
18 perhaps --

19 THE COMMISSIONER: They came
20 from where?

21 MR. BAYLY: They came out
22 of cross-examination, and we don't have a transcript.

23 MR. GOUDGE: They are contained,
24 I think, in a volume which was filed as an exhibit
25 which we can perhaps dig out at the end of today and
26 give to Dr. Milne.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, they'd
28 be in here, wouldn't they?

29 MR. BAYLY: We haven't got that
30 far yet, sir.

Shearer, Milne, Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 MR. GOUDGE: We haven't got
2 that volume yet, sir.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: Oh.

4 MR. GOUDGE: But we can provide --

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, you
6 know what I'm thinking of.

7 MR. GOUDGE: -- yes, we can
8 provide Dr. Milne with the statistics.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: At any
10 rate you might comment on those when you return, if
11 you wouldn't mind, and as I say, anything else in
12 Dr. Pimlott's statement which Mr. Bayly will give you
13 that you might wish to comment on where he may have
14 taken a point of view that's at variance with what
15 you concluded. I'd like to know that.

16 A Very good, sir.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: So we'll --

18 MR. GOUDGE: Adjourn till ten
19 o'clock tomorrow morning?

20 THE COMMISSIONER: -- adjourn
21 till ten o'clock tomorrow morning.

22 MR. BAYLY: I would propose, if
23 there are no objections, that cross-examination of
24 the other two members of this panel continue tomorrow
25 morning, and that we call Mr. Snow and Mr. Pettigrew
26 following that.

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Fine.

28 (WITNESS MILNE ASIDE)

29 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO FEBRUARY 14, 1976)

30

347 (Berger Hearings)
M835
vol.124

13 Feb., '76.

Mackenzie Valley Pipeline-
Inquiry

347
M835
vol.124

CA1
Z 1
-74M21

MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE INQUIRY

Government
Publications

IN THE MATTER OF APPLICATIONS BY EACH OF
(a) CANADIAN ARCTIC GAS PIPELINE LIMITED FOR A
RIGHT-OF-WAY THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS
CROWN LANDS WITHIN THE YUKON TERRITORY AND
THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES; AND
(b) FOOTHILLS PIPE LINES LTD. FOR A RIGHT-OF-WAY
THAT MIGHT BE GRANTED ACROSS CROWN LANDS
WITHIN THE NORTHWEST TERRITORIES,
FOR THE PURPOSE OF A PROPOSED MACKENZIE VALLEY PIPELINE

and

IN THE MATTER OF THE SOCIAL, ENVIRONMENTAL AND
ECONOMIC IMPACT REGIONALLY OF THE CONSTRUCTION,
OPERATION AND SUBSEQUENT ABANDONMENT OF THE ABOVE
PROPOSED PIPELINE

(Before the Honourable Mr. Justice Berger, Commissioner)

Inuvik, N.W.T.

February 14, 1974

PROCEEDINGS AT INQUIRY

Volume 125

E R R A T A

By N.J. Wilimovsky :

VOL. 109, p. 16595, line 6	in = and
	8 a = of
	19 in = and
16691	22 dimensionalist = dimensionless
16692	15 I have = I may have
	22 coincided = established
16693	6 imperical = emperical
	22 vital (delete)
16699	19 Elverson = Alverson

347
11835
Vol. 125

APPEARANCES:

Mr. Ian G. Scott, Q.C.,
Mr. Stephen T. Goudge,
Mr. Alick Ryder and
Mr. Ian Roland for Mackenzie Valley Pipeline
Inquiry;

Mr. Pierre Genest, Q.C.,
Mr. Jack Marshall, and
Mr. Darryl Carter for Canadian Arctic Gas
Pipeline Limited;
Mr. Reginald Gibbs, Q.C.,
Mr. Alan Hollingworth &
Mr. John W. Lutes, for Foothills Pipe Lines Ltd.;

Mr. Russell Anthony &
Pro. Alastair Lucas for Canadian Arctic Resources
Mr. Garth Evans Committee;

Mr. Glen W. Bell and
Mr. Gerry Sutton, for Northwest Territories
Indian Brotherhood, and
Metis Association of the
Northwest Territories;

Mr. John Bayly
or
Miss Leslie Lane for Inuit Tapirisat of Canada,
and The Committee for
Original Peoples Entitle-
ment;

Mr. Ron Veale and
Mr. Allen Lueck for The Council for the Yukon
Indians;

Mr. Carson H. Templeton, for Environment Protection
Board;

Mr. David Reesor for Northwest Territories
Association of Municipal-
ities;

Mr. Murray Sigler for Northwest Territories
Chamber of Commerce.

Mr. John Ballem, Q.C., for Producer Companys;

1	<u>I N D E X</u>	<u>Page</u>
2	WITNESSES FOR C.O.P.E.:	
3	James SHEARER	
	CHARLES PETER LEWIS	
4	- Cross-Examination by Mr. Evans (cont)	19019
	- Cross-Examination by Mr. Marshall	19024
5	- Cross-Examination by Mr. Goudge	19026
6	R.K. PETTIGREW	
	Norman SNOW	
7	William J. LOGAN	
	- In Chief	19084
8		
9		
10		
11	EXHIBITS:	
12		
13	469 Report on Shallow Seismic Survey in 3 areas of Mackenzie Delta, 1975	19142
14	470 Qualifications & Evidence of R.K.Pettigrew	19142
15	471 Qualifications & Evidence of N. Snow	19142
16	472 Qualifications & Evidence of W.J.Logan	19142
17		
18		
19		
20		
21		
22		
23		
24		
25		
26		
27		
28		
29		
30		

February 14, 1976.

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll
and gentlemen.

THE COMMISSIONER: Right. Well

THE COMMISSIONER: Right.

CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. EVANS (CONTINUED):

WITNESS LEWIS: I really have
no idea.

Q You couldn't comment on that?

A It's not within my field
of expertise at all and any comments I would make --

Q Mr. Milne is better qualified to answer. Do you have anything to say about that, Mr. Shearer?

WITNESS SHEARER: Not really.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 THE COMMISSIONER: Next question.

2 MR. EVANS: With respect to
3 an area that I think is within your area of expertise,
4 what clean-up measures do you think are possible once an
5 oil spill hits the beaches, like specifically around the
6 Mackenzie Delta and Beaufort Sea area?

7 WITNESS LEWIS: I think the
8 general consensus among the people involved in the
9 Beaufort Sea project, at least, and I think this would
10 include the industry is that once the oil gets on the
11 beaches or on the low-lying parts of the river deltas,
12 that any clean-up measures would do more damage than
13 leaving the oil there. So, I would suggest that the
14 policy, the suggested policy, will probably be to leave
15 it.

16 Q O.K. Now, with respect
17 to flowlines which, I understand, are the lines that
18 are going to lead the gas and oil onshore; would there
19 be a problem with buried flowlines near the coast when--
20 you know, for instance when the coast is retreating?

21 A I think there could be
22 great problems with buried flowlines near coasts.
23 Specifically, most importantly near cliffed areas where
24 there is a large amount of ground ice which are rapidly
25 retreating which, in some cases, have ground ice which
26 extends below sea level and out underneath the nearshore
27 area, so you would effectively be putting your pipeline
28 through, degrading massive ice in the nearshore area
29 and into massive ice at the shoreline. That problem,
30 the coastal retreat problem of course, would not be so

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 significant in the depositional area, depending on
2 depth of burial, which, I assume, would be deep enough
3 that no normal storm event could expose the pipelines
4 so you'd have a much less serious situation there.

5 Q By "problem" I take you
6 to mean the possibility of a break in the line, is that
7 correct?

8 A The possibility of exposure
9 of the pipe and to ice, for example, moving in the
10 near-shore area or to any other two-way forces which
11 might undermine the pipe. This would be, I think, most
12 serious where the shoreline is cliffed and rapidly
13 retreating; most dangerous.

14 Q I see. Well, how deep
15 would this have to be buried in order to have some
16 element of safety?

17 A Well, again, that would
18 depend upon which type of coastal land form you were
19 bringing the pipe into. In theory of course, the waves
20 are capable of eroding to a depth of about ten meters.
21 This is a -- when I mentioned that ten meters, or thirty
22 feet, approximately yesterday, I said it was a generally
23 accepted level. Within the Beaufort Sea, it seems to
24 have some meaning because we find that evidence of ice
25 scouring decreases to almost zero shoreward of the ten
26 meter line, indicating possibly two things. One, that
27 not as many scours are occurring because we are within
28 the landfast ice zone and, two, that the waves are
29 capable of moving the sediment in that area and of
30 infilling scours. Perhaps there's a third as well.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 The sediment in the nearshore area tends to be coarser
2 and wouldn't maintain a scour as easily as the finer
3 sediment offshore, so that's the maximum, that obviously
4 to bury a pipeline thirty feet, coming into a deposition-
5 al area might not be necessary but for reasonable
6 safety, I think that would be a figure to work with.

7 Q Now, I've given you one
8 of the exhibits which-- on which there's a route drawn.
9 That's been referred to as the "Barry Route". Dr. Barry
10 drew that for us the other day and he feels that's a
11 better route than the one cross-delta route proposed by the
12 company. I wonder if you could comment on it.

13 A Well, as I said in my
14 evidence in chief, I would certainly favor not crossing
15 the delta at all. Now, as opposed to a choice between
16 the route which CAGPL proposes and the route which
17 Dr. Barry proposes, on the basis of geomorphological ground
18 alone
19 'I don't think that there's really much to choose between
20 the two and I know that Mr. Barry's work -- or suggested
21 route -- is based on biological considerations and then,
22 given those considerations, his route is probably the
23 better route but not for geomorphological reasons.

24 Q Yes, Mr. Lewis I was
25 asking you just to comment from a geological point of
26 view.

27 A O.K.

28 Q Now, Mr. Shearer, will
29 the process of subsea pingo formation cause movement
30 of the ground under the flowlines? I think you dis-
cussed pingos quite extensively in your paper.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 WITNESS SHEARER: As I under-
2 stand the question, are you asking me if subsea pingo
3 formation will move flowlines that have already been
4 installed in the area?

5 Q Yes, and after that to
6 what degree that's likely to be a problem?

7 A I would think that they
8 probably don't. I would think that most of them that
9 are going to form have formed by now. Their process of
10 formation is the replacement of the freshwater lakes.
11 They used to be by saltwater some five thousand years
12 ago and I think that they've formed to their maximum
13 extent now, although there may be some movement, but
14 I don't think there'll be any significant -- added
15 significant numbers of new pingos forming at this point.
16 So, I don't think that would be a problem.

17 Q Now, there's been quite a
18 lot of discussion about shorefast ice but I at least
19 don't have very much understanding of this subject. I
20 wonder if you'd like to discuss shorefast ice in the
21 Beaufort Sea, compare it with that in other areas, and
22 talk about its' potential to serve as a drilling plat-
23 form.

24 A Well, I don't really know
25 very much about it. I can make some comments, but
26 they're not based upon a lot of personal research. I
27 feel that in terms of a drilling platform, the shore-
28 fast ice in the Arctic islands is probably a better
29 platform because they happen to be drilling in deeper
30 water, therefore, they can -- the drilling platform can

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Evans
Cross-Exam by Marshall

1 absorb more lateral movement and the shorefast ice
2 certainly moves when the weather changes. The ice
3 contracts and expands so you get a certain lateral
4 movement just due to expansion and contraction.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me.
6 You -- I understand what you've said, but you said
7 it's better -- drilling there is better, better than
8 what? What are you comparing it to, drilling from a
9 drill ship, or?

10 A No, I'm sorry. I would
11 say that using the landfast ice in the Arctic islands
12 gives you one extra level of leverage, say using land-
13 fast ice in the Beaufort Sea area.

14 Q Because of the depth?

15 A Because of the depth,
16 you can absorb a greater depth range, right. I guess
17 I don't want to add any more to that. I don't want to
18 go too far away.

19 MR. EVANS; O.K., I don't
20 have any further questions, Mr. Commissioner.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Thank you
22 Mr. Evans. What is the order, Mr. Goudge?

23 MR. GOUDGE: I think it would
24 be Mr. Hollingworth next, sir.

25 MR. HOLLINGWORTH: I have no
26 questions.

27 MR. GOUDGE: And then Mr.
28 Marshall.

29 CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. MARSHALL:

30 Q I have a question. Mr.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Marshall

1 Shearer. I was away when you gave your evidence before
2 and perhaps had I been here we would have got this
3 cleared up. Do I understand that you have produced
4 the map that's on the wall there showing the delta and
5 the Beaufort area, with rather a bad case of the measles,
6 all those little speckles all over it?

7 A That's correct.

8 Q I was looking at that
9 the other when somebody drew it to my attention. I
10 see a heading, "Projected CAGSL Activity" in the legend,
11 in the lower righthand corner.

12 A Can you give me a minute
13 to go and have a look at it?

14 Q Sure.

15 A -- Refresh my memory.

16 Q It's about the oil pipe-
17 line under that heading. My point is simply this Mr.
18 Shearer, isn't it clear that the heading is wrong.
19 You're talking about projected ^{activities} by a wide variety of
20 people, not by Arctic Gas?

21 A Of course, of course. Yes.

22 MR. MARSHALL: That's all I
23 have to ask. The reason I asked was that Mr. Veale asked me
24 the other day about all these facilities Arctic Gas
25 was planning to build off in the Beaufort Sea. He
26 thought it was one of the Arctic Gas maps that had been
27 drawn so well.

28 MR. BAYLY: Perhaps Old Crow
29 was in Alaska on it.

30 MR. MARSHALL: Foothills had

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 been left off, I think that was the distinguishing
2 feature.

3 THE COMMISSIONER: .It made it
4 suspicious that Arctic Gas appeared to have prevailed.

5 MR. HOLLINGWORTH: I don't
6 mind being left out of that activity.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: All right
8 Mr. Goudge, any questions?

9 CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. GOUDGE:
10 Mr. Shearer, left me start with you. I take it there
11 was a study done for the Beaufort Sea Project on bottom
12 sediments in the Beaufort Sea.

13 A Correct.

14 Q That wasn't your study
15 but you may have some knowledge of it.

16 A I should have some, yes.

17 Q Let me ask you in par-
18 ticular in relation to Shallow Bay whether you have
19 any knowledge of the nature of the bottom sediments in
20 Shallow Bay.

21 A I don't have any direct
22 knowledge of the nature of sediments in Shallow Bay,
23 except that I've done some work in the channels very
24 close to Shallow Bay.

25 Q What does that work lead
26 you to speculate at least about the bottom sediments in
27 Shallow Bay?

28 A Well, that they would be
29 very fined grained and I believe there's no deep
30 channel running Shallow Bay. In other words, it's an

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 area where the narrow channels widen when they hit the
2 sea and sediments deposited in it, it's quite shallow.
3 I'm just referring to my memory of Canadian Arctic Gas
4 -- gee, what's the man called -- their particular map
5 running across Shallow Bay of the -- it's a particular
6 map showing the pipeline route across Shallow Bay and
7 they have the depths recorded there.

8 Q Yes. Let me ask you to
9 give your view as to whether the sediments on the bottom
10 of Shallow Bay would be loosely structured or compacted
11 in any way?

12 A I couldn't answer. I
13 really don't know whether the bottom of Shallow Bay is
14 frozen or not and I would presume, if isn't, there might
15 be more compaction that if it -- according to what
16 Peter said yesterday, that if it was frozen.

17 Q Well, Mr. Lewis, let me
18 ask you the same set of questions. Do you have any
19 knowledge of the nature of the sediments on the bottom
20 of Shallow Bay?

21 WITNESS LEWIS: The only
22 knowledge I have in addition to what Mr. Shearer's
23 already mentioned, is a report of a set of drill holes
24 that were done by Northern Engineering for CAGPL
25 across Shallow Bay along the proposed route.

26 Q Have you seen those?

27 A I saw them just before
28 I came up. I just had a chance to skim through. The--

29 Q What opinion --

30 A They were just logs

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 giving the gross characteristics of the sediment
2 primarily silts, some fine sands and one other very
3 interesting point and that is in a couple of the holes
4 offshore, in Shallow Bay, frozen ground at depths below
5 the bottom in the order of twenty to forty feet, so
6 unfrozen above that; some unknown thickness of frozen
7 ground below.

8 Q How frequent were the
9 finds of frozen ground?

10 A I didn't have a chance to
11 go through it in any detail to know if it was continu-
12 ous or not. Just that it had been found.

13 Q Aside from that study,
14 what was your general knowledge of the area lead you
15 to predict by way of the compaction or loose spreading
16 of the sediments on the bottom of Shallow Bay?

17 A Well, as I said yesterday
18 when I talked about the consolidation problems, I was
19 speculating. One thing that we do know is that the
20 west side of Shallow Bay is being cut back rather rapid-
21 ly by waves. It appears to be an older part of the
22 delta plain. It's higher than the eastern side, which is
23 lower and I think, younger. The west side is being cut
24 back rather rapidly and the presence of permafrost --
25 of frozen ground beneath Shallow Bay suggests, to me,
26 that Shallow Bay may be an area which has relatively
27 recently come into existence so that you have a situation
28 where relict permafrost is present. It is degrading
29 and perhaps, therefore, there would not have been en-
30 ough time for the sediments to consolidate and they may be

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 in the process of consolidating, at the present time.

2 Q Well, I'll be coming
3 back to that later with you sir. Perhaps, if I could
4 return to you Mr. Shearer, you've told us a great deal
5 about your knowledge as to scouring and I understand you
6 to say -- or do I understand you to say that the scour-
7 ing process enhances the movement of sediment on the
8 bottom?

9 WITNESS SHEARER: I don't know
10 that I actually said that, but I can see that when
11 scouring happens, you would release some of the sediment
12 that had deposited on the bottom and compacted and
13 perhaps set it back into the water column and it would
14 continue to move with the current.

15 Q So I suppose in a sense,
16 like plowing the bottom?

17 A Yes, sure.

18 Q What would that do, in
19 your view, to bottom sediments that had oil entrapped
20 around them? We've heard something in the past few
21 days about the sinking of oil around sediment particles.

22 A Right, sort of, you mean
23 the tar ball concept?

24 Q Yes.

25 A I imagine it depends upon
26 the density of these things. If they were less dense,
27 they would sort of sit on the bottom as a very thin
28 film and almost be moved back and forth with wave
29 action and the sediments might not move at all. They
30 may be just continually moved, depending upon what wave

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 action you needed on the surface to give you the necess-
2 ary velocity to mobilize them on the bottom. If they
3 were quite dense, say as dense as sediment particles,
4 they would just be deposited within the sedimentary
5 column with the other sediments being brought out of
6 the Mackenzie and just fit into the sedimentary column.

7 Q There is a possibility
8 I take it though that the scouring process, in terms
9 of stirring up oil sediment on the bottom would add to
10 the danger posed by that sediment?

11 A I think it would add to
12 it, but I don't think it would be as much as say what
13 wave action would do.

14 Q Let me ask you whether
15 there is any possibility that the scouring process,
16 in relation to that kind of sediment would enhance the
17 biodegradation possibilities for that?

18 A I can't really comment
19 on that.

20 Q Mr. Lewis, do you have any
21 comment on that?

22 WITNESS LEWIS: No, I haven't.
23 I have no knowledge of --

24 Q Now, you refer, Mr.
25 Shearer, in your evidence to the placing of the silo
26 that the offshore drilling company's proposed to use and
27 you say that the silo is planned to contain the well-
28 head below the maximum level of scour. I take it you're
29 satisfied that this could be done technologically?

30 WITNESS SHEARER: I think so.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q And that the only pro-
2 blem is knowing the maximum depth that you have to use.

3 A Correct.

4 Q So, that what you're
5 talking about, as I understand your statistics, is a silo
6 that is about say ten meters, at most. It runs to a
7 depth of ten meters below the ocean floor, since I
8 think you put ten meters as your maximum scour depth
9 below the -- they don't all go that deep.

10 A I think that maybe when
11 one considers the specific location of where you want
12 to drill, you could do a side scan survey and locate
13 the scour with maximum relief and it may be three or
14 four meters, and it's probably not ten because that was
15 only found in one area. So that -- say it was three
16 or four meters, you would put the silo in -- set the
17 silo in far enough so that the top of the B.O.P. stack,
18 or the blowout preventer was, say, a meter or so below
19 the scour with maximum relief in the particular area
20 you wanted to position your well.

21 Q I take it if you wanted
22 to be really conservative, you would take as your maxi-
23 mum depth, the deepest scour that had been found in
24 the southern Beaufort Sea area, rather than simply in
25 the neighborhood of the proposed hole?

26 A Right.

27 Q That would be about ten
28 meters.

29 A Yes.

30 Q Now, you also spoke about

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 both yesterday and last time you were here, of the
2 possibility of running flowlines along protected areas,
3 given sufficient knowledge of scour locations. I take
4 it you see that as at least theoretically possible?

5 A I'm not quite sure I under-
6 stood your question.

7 Q You spoke of deep channels
8 which were perhaps old river beds which might be areas
9 protected from scour.

10 A Right.

11 Q Could therefore be used
12 for the running of flowlines?

13 A Right.

14 Q Yes. That, at the moment,
15 is only a theoretical concept, I take it. There isn't
16 anywhere near enough information to allow that to be
17 considered as an immediately practical solution.

18 A I think if, today, we were
19 propositioned with say a discovery in a given area and
20 we were to look at possible alternatives of putting in
21 flowlines and where would we put them, we could certainly
22 go first to the channels, the offshore channels that
23 are close to this area, and would look at them in the
24 first instance.

25 Q And you're satisfied that
26 there's sufficient information about precise locations
27 of those channels to allow them to be used even in the
28 near future?

29 A Well, they would be the --
30 this is the first^{place} you would look to and you would do a

1 detailed survey to obviously delineate it in more de-
2 tail.

9 A Correct. It would be the
10 similar problems you would have drilling on land through
11 permafrost.

17 A Only the problem of the
18 particular surface weather conditions which you don't
19 have to deal with on land.

23 A Of course.

27 A I don't think so.

30 A I guess I agree.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 MR. GOUDGE: I assumed he
2 agreed, sir. Now, let me ask you to turn to page seven
3 of your prepared text. You refer at the bottom of the
4 page or in the last couple of paragraphs to:

5 "permafrost and associated surface hydrate pro-
6 blems that are encountered in exploration drilling
7 on land as being problems likely to exist offshore
8 as well".

9 What do you refer to when you refer to "associated
10 surface hydrate problems"?

11 A Well, what I mean there,
12 the problems that they've had in some of the holes in
13 the delta when they get just below the permafrost. They
14 encounter frozen gas and these sometimes give kicks that
15 -- I can't really talk on it with any knowledge, I
16 just know they run into problems at that level.

17 Q At that level, right.
18 But once again, you're not suggesting that those par-
19 ticular problems are any worse offshore than they are
20 onshore?

21 A I'm not suggesting they're
22 any worse. No. They may be different because of the
23 different permafrost -- the different temperature
24 regime offshore. You saw yesterday that the perma-
25 frost model for offshore is somewhat more complicated --
26 while I didn't go into the onshore one, but it's gone
27 through a number of stages of melting and refreezing
28 and the base -- I don't think the base of the perma-
29 frost offshore is in equilibrium with the particular
30 surface temperature of -1.5, -1.8°C. So that, I think

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 you might be able to say that the problems won't be
2 any different, but I wouldn't guarantee it.

3 Q I don't fully understand
4 why you say the problems offshore might be different
5 in this particular area of surface hydrate.

6 A Well, let me just explain
7 it, try and get this out a little better. On the Tuk
8 Peninsula, or the delta, there's a layer of permafrost
9 varying from 300 meters to 500 meters thick and I
10 think, in equilibrium with the surface temperature of
11 roughly -10°C , so that the base of the permafrost is
12 not shifting in reaction to a change in surface temp-
13 erature. We saw offshore that it was very similar some
14 15,000 years ago. We might have had the same situation
15 we have on land now. But since sea level rise, the
16 base of the permafrost is now moving upwards in reaction
17 to a much lower mean annual temperature on the surface
18 of this -- on the bottom surface, of -1.5°C .

19 Q You mean higher mean
20 annual temperature?

21 A Yes. Right, sorry.
22 Higher. So I don't really know what changes the bottom,
23 let's say the base of the permafrost 15,000 years ago
24 -400 meters than say the present base. I don't know
25 where it is, but I have a model of where it may be at
26 say -200 meters. I don't know what's happened in be-
27 tween that -400 and -200 meters.

28 Q I see, are you suggesting
29 that there may irregularities in the bottom of the
30 permafrost that may trap the hydrates?

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 A No, I'm not. I'm just
2 saying that I don't think we really know if there is
3 any -- going to be any difference or not.

4 Q What you're saying is
5 there is some difference in the permafrost regime off-
6 shore as compared to onshore and you suspect, although
7 you have no knowledge, that it may have led to possible
8 different hydrate problems?

9 A O.K., I'll agree with
10 that.

11 Q Now sir, going back to
12 the evidence you showed us yesterday concerning scour,
13 I took it from your slides yesterday that the two
14 principle mechanisms for obtaining knowledge about
15 scour are the echo sounder and the side scanner of fish
16 or whatever you called it. Is that right?

17 A That's correct. The eco-
18 sounder looking straight down and the side scan
19 sonar which gives you a picture somewhat similar to an
20 air photograph or a radar picture.

21 Q In interpreting scour
22 and its characteristics, you put together the in-
23 formation gathered from those two sources?

24 A That's correct we --

25 Q That's where your inform-
26 ation comes from.

27 A Well, we did try and do
28 some sampling with a submersable in the center of these
29 scours, but it was so cloudy on the bottom, we couldn't.

30 Q You couldn't see a thing,

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 eh?

2 A We couldn't really tell
3 where we were. We could feel them with a submersable.
4 We sort of became negatively buoyant and slid down
5 these things, but -- so we knew they were there
6 physically, but we couldn't really see them.

7 Q Yes. You've spoken to
8 us about the relief of the scour, and I take you to
9 mean by that the depth of the scour marks. What about
10 the width of them. When you showed us the slides
11 yesterday of the side scanner -- is that what you call
12 it?

13 A Side scanner. Side scan
14 sonar.

15 Q Yes. How wide physically
16 are the marks that were indicated on the slides?

17 A All right. Perhaps I
18 should have pointed that out more specifically. It
19 seems to vary from twenty and thirty feet wide to --
20 I think we found some up to 300 feet wide.

21 Q Your analogy of pin on
22 the plywood^{board} did me in, I think. They're really very
23 wide marks, are they not?

24 A Of course. The plywood
25 board was supposed to represent the polar pack, roughly
26 3,000 miles across.

27 Q Now, let me turn you in
28 specific terms to the possibility of ice scour in
29 Shallow Bay. First of all, I take it you yourself have
30 done no research as to the presence of ice scour in

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Shallow Bay?

2 A No, I haven't.

3 Q What would your general
4 knowledge, though of Shallow Bay as an area and,
5 particularly, the characteristics of ice scouring in
6 the southern Beaufort Sea that you spoke to us about
7 yesterday lead you to predict about ice scour in Shallow
8 Bay?

9 A Well, I wouldn't expect --
10 you wouldn't expect winter polar pack getting in that
11 far because it's in the shorefast area and I also
12 wouldn't expect in the summer many pressure ridges or
13 ice islands to get in that far. But I feel, that in
14 the springtime, in spring floods, you may get a lot of
15 pieces of old surface ice of the Mackenzie coming down
16 there and perhaps forming a jam or being, by the current,
17 being pushed along the bottom. A couple of times,
18 flying over there in the fall time, you can see the--
19 lots of, I guess you call them scour -- lot's of scours
20 on the edges of the channels which had happened during
21 spring flood, well presumed to happen during spring
22 flood at higher water levels.

23 Q This is rather a different
24 kind of ice scouring, though, than what you were
25 describing in the Beaufort Sea, isn't it? I understood
26 you to describe in the Beaufort Sea ice scour due
27 primarily to the entrapment of ice islands or pressure
28 ridges in the pack ice.

29 A Of course, very different.

30 Q That's the worse kind of

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 scour, I take it. Scour can also be caused by,
2 presumably wind blown ice islands in open water, but
3 that's not so powerful a force.

4 A No. Not at all.

5 Q But the ice scour you're
6 now referring to, as I understand it, would be ice
7 driven by the water pressure of the breaking Mackenzie.

8 A Correct.

9 Q Yes. You would anticipate
10 to come back to Shallow Bay, I take it, that there might
11 be some ice scour on the bottom of Shallow Bay, judging
12 from what you know about water pressure and the marks
13 that you have seen caused by ice on the banks of Shallow
14 Bay.

15 A Correct.

16 Q Now, Arctic Gas has had
17 prepared a document which Mr. Marshall brought with him
18 at the beginning of the week called, "A Report on a
19 Shallow Seismic Survey in Three Areas of the Mackenzie
20 Delta", and it refers to, in part, Shallow Bay. I take
21 it you've not read this study since it only arrived at
22 the beginning of the week. There is in it, though, --
23 there is in it an echo sounder profile which, I take it,
24 is one of the two information sources you would use in
25 plotting possible scour marks on the bottom of a water
26 surface. Is that correct?

27 A That's correct.

28 Q That document is an
29 attachment to this report and when I finish the questions,
30 sir, I would like to have this marked as an exhibit

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 along with the report. Now, you'll see as you look at
2 that, Mr. Shearer, that it appears to indicate an echo
3 sounder profile running, really, across Shallow Bay and
4 I think that's the A - B line.

5 A Correct.

6 Q Now, that is at the pipe-
7 line crossing. As I understand it, and you tell me if
8 I'm explaining it correctly for the record, that line
9 indicates the lower half of the diagram shows the geo-
10 graphical path that the echo sounder took in crossing
11 Shallow Bay. The wiggly line indicated A - B on the
12 upper part of the sheet, shows the pattern it found on
13 the bottom in making that crossing.

14 A That's correct.

15 Q Yes. Now if you would
16 look at the A - B line, up above, it appears to me to
17 be very wiggly.

18 A Yes.

19 Q That's a layman's inter-
20 pretation of an echo sounder line. Do those wiggly
21 lines tell you anything or allow you to conclude any-
22 thing about whether any of the troughs in the lines
23 might have been caused by ice scour?

24 A Just give me about ten
25 seconds to calculate a horizontal scale on it, and then
26 I'll be able to give you some --

27 Q Oh yes, I should have --
28 by all means. I think you'll find that it's about
29 1,000 feet to the inch.

30 A A thousand feet to the inch,
O.K.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q Now, I'm advised that it
2 contains a vertical exaggeration of thirty-five. That
3 means absolutely nothing to me, but it may help you.

4 A As long as you've got
5 the horizontal and the vertical scales together, you
6 can get a -- visualize, roughly, what -- I would say
7 at a thousand feet to the inch, some of these could be
8 possibly, scours; although most of them, the major
9 features seem to be a little wider than most scours.
10 One comment on the scours I have seen on the edges of
11 the channels flying over the Mackenzie are beyond resolu-
12 tion of this equipment, I would think, at this scale.
13 Certainly, we wouldn't -- like a scour a foot wide --

14 Q Can you explain that to
15 me I don't understand what you mean by "beyond
16 resolution".

17 A Well, the scour or some-
18 thing goudging into the bottom a foot wide and a foot
19 deep and the length wouldn't matter. Let's assume we
20 just crossed it at some point. This particular line,
21 the width of the pencil line here is a lot more than
22 the -- in terms of width, anyway -- it's a lot more
23 than one foot, so that to show up a scour one foot wide
24 and one foot deep would be just -- I don't think you'd
25 be able to resolve it. I'd have to know what the
26 original equipment was to see whether they've drawn
27 this thing by, in fact, just generalizing from a high
28 resolution record. If you had the original record, you
29 might be able to tell a lot more than looking at some-
30 thing like this.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q I see. Perhaps at coffee,
2 you could have a look at the report. I don't know,
3 frankly, whether that information is in the report, but
4 if you wouldn't mind looking and telling us if you can
5 add to your conclusions about that as a result of look-
6 ing at the report. There's one other line that -- well,
7 just to capsulize your view of the A - B line, which
8 is the major crossing line, you say that you think
9 some of the markings there may indicate ice scour,
10 but that's as far as you're prepared to go?

11 A That's correct. I gather
12 the A - B is not all the way across Shallow Bay. It's
13 just the west shoreline. Is that correct?

14 Q Yes. It runs out from
15 the west shoreline and how far would depend on trans-
16 posing the scale.

17 A Right. O.K. It may be
18 about two miles offshore. Yes.

19 Q Yes. Now, again from a
20 layman's point of view, it appears to me that the
21 bottom is very uneven and you say that some of those
22 unevennesses may be due to scour. Would you have any
23 explanation for the others if they're not due to scour?

24 A It think it's possible
25 in the springtime to perhaps get some ice jamming in the
26 area and you would have the increased currents around
27 these pieces of grounded or jammed ice and you could
28 have current erosion.

29 Q Water scour in other words?

30 A Water scour, sure.

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q Now, just to give us an
2 example for the record, what are some of the maximum
3 depths shown in the marks that may possibly be scour on
4 the A - B line? Can you read that?

5 A Twenty feet -- Eighteen,
6 twenty feet. This is water depth you're talking about
7 now?

8 Q No, I'm talking about
9 scour depths from the --

10 A Oh, O.K., sure. The
11 maximum might be four feet, five feet.

12 Q Yes. That's what it appears
13 to you from that line?

14 A Correct.

15 Q Yes. Now, if you'd look
16 at one other thing that I think strikes you in looking
17 at that document, arises in the D - E line. Can you find
18 it on the document?

19 A Correct, I have.

20 Q It runs at a diagonal across
21 the A - B line, looking at the lower half of the sheet.

22 A The D line actually is
23 almost parallel to the A - B line.

24 Q Yes.

25 A It's a thousand or 1500
26 feet further north, but it's --

27 Q If you look at the bottom
28 traced by the D - E line, you'll see, in once instance,
29 a very deep hole, apparently.

30 A Correct, yes, down to about

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 45 feet, I guess.

2 Q That is a hole 45 feet
3 below the surrounding bottom?

4 A No. It's 45 feet below
5 the surface.

6 Q How far below the surround--
7 ing?

8 A Twenty-five, thirty below
9 the bottom.

10 Q Yes. Do you have any
11 possible explanation for that?

12 A The first inclination, when
13 you look at something like that, is to assume it's part
14 of a -- it's the real channel of Shallow Bay and you
15 would say that this is where the major currents are,
16 but if this is a line that's parallel to A - B, A - B
17 should also have this particular channel in it, which it
18 doesn't. So that it seems to be an isolated hole and
19 have nothing to do with channelization; so that the only
20 thing I can say, is that maybe it's, again, erosion --
21 water erosion, due to constriction in the springtime of
22 flood waters around grounded ice and jammed ice.

23 Q You wouldn't think that
24 particular hole would be due to ice scour?

25 A Not at all.

26 Q Now, the report itself from
27 which that document is drawn, says on page three in the
28 last paragraph:

29 "it is anticipated that the change in bottom profile
30 from smooth on the banks to rough in the deeper water
is due to ice scouring,

1 however, this cannot be confirmed from echograms
2 alone, so no definitive statements can be made with-
3 out further investigation".

4 In light of what you said, do you have any further comment
5 to make on that statement made by the authors of this
6 report?

7 A One thing occurred to me
8 when I was looking at this hole. A lot of people talk
9 about thermokarst melting and I don't -- it just -- I
10 would like to know the temperature regime in this area --
11 the average temperature regime and I think, possibly,
12 it's -- a number of things come up if the west shoreline
13 of Shallow Bay is being eroded at a great rate, one could
14 calculate how far offshore this particular hole is and
15 it could possibly be melting within permafrost which --
16 at the position where this hole now exists, it was once
17 dry land and above -- not part of the river channel,
18 and I would assume, possessing a certain thickness of
19 permafrost underneath it. As you have channel migration,
20 this particular point becomes part of the channel, moves
21 further out into the channel as the channel moves further
22 westward, or the edge of the west side of the channel
23 moves further westward. If your temperature regime here
24 your mean annual temperature regime changes, maybe you
25 have particular melting of permafrost in that area and
26 you may have a hole develop because of melting of perma-
27 frost.

28 Q Localized permafrost?

29	A	No. Localize melting.
----	---	-----------------------

30 MR. BAYLY: It strikes me that a

Lewis, Shearer
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 lot of the questions that Mr. Shearer is being asked
2 are "guess what's in the report", and to my way of
3 thinking, it might be sensible for us to take a short
4 break and let him have a look at the report.

5 MR.GOUDGE: By all means, sir,
6 that would be helpful.

7 MR. BAYLY: Then he could comment
8 on what's in it.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: All right.
10 How much longer do you think you'll be?

11 MR. GOUDGE: Well, I'm almost
12 finished with Mr. Shearer unless he comes up with any-
13 thing after looking at the report. I then have a number
14 of questions for Mr. Lewis.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll
16 take a break now, and then, perhaps when Mr. Goudge is
17 finished we can treat ourselves to another break before
18 your next panel starts. I just didn't want it to be
19 thought that if we broke now, this was the only break
20 we'll have this morning.

21 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 11:03 A.M.)
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED PURSUANT TO ADJOURNMENT)

2 MR: GOUDGE: Well Gentlemen,
3 you've had a chance to look at the report now and let me
4 ask you a few specific questions and then if you have any
5 general comments on the report I'd be grateful if you'd
6 make them.

7 Q First, Mr. Lewis, you've
8 had a chance now to examine the echo sounder scan, or what-
9 ever you call it. I wonder if you have any views as to
10 whether the markings indicated on the AB line in partic-
11 ular might be caused by scour.

12 WITNESS LEWIS: Yes I do.

13 Q First, before you answer
14 I take it that you're familiar with the echo sounder
15 process and have interpreted these kinds of scans before.

16 A Yes, I have.

17 Q Adnausium Dr. Fyles advises
18 me. Would you please indicate what you think that scan
19 might indicate.

20 A I think there are several
21 things to consider in the interpretation of this record.
22 One is -- I should say that the record was taken in Sept-
23 ember of 1975, that's in the fall, when, of course, there
24 has been no ice in the area, moving through the area for
25 a number of months. So that's the first thing to consider.
26 The second thing to consider is that Shallow Bay is the
27 front of the Mackenzie. There's a tremendous amount of
28 sediment being brought into Shallow Bay from the channels
29 of the Mackenzie River and that a considerable portion of
30 this sediment will be deposited in either, permanently or

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 mostly temporarily in Shallow Bay. So we have a lot of
2 sediment coming in. We have a lot of sediment being dropped
3 in Shallow Bay, perhaps to be moved again at some stage,
4 but still we'll have a changing bottom, one that will be
5 having sediment deposited and then picked up and eroded,
6 and moving through. So, if scour occurred in the spring
7 time; in May, June, I think it highly unlikely that evidence
8 of that scour would persist through to September of
9 that same year. I think the bottom would be too mobile for
10 that.

11 Q Sorry. What then would the
12 reasons be for the kinds of markings that you see on the
13 A-B line.

14 A You see similar markings
15 in echograms taken across some of the wider Mackenzie
16 Delta channels. I think they're bars; current features
17 related to the movement of sediment, to the deposition of
18 sediment.

19 Q Yes, I cut you off before.
20 Did you want to add a thought to--

21 A I just would like to make
22 it clear, however that the fact that I don't think that
23 these particular marks are scour marks, does not mean that
24 I don't think that scour would occur in the area. I think
25 it could well occur in the area, but to find out whether
26 or not it does you'd have to do your echo sounding immediately
27 after the passage of the ice in the spring.

28 Q I take it, like Mr. Shearer
29 you would be very dubious about ice scour due to floating
30 ice islands in Shallow Bay because of the lack of depth

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 in the water. I--well more than dubious, I'd say that it
2 would be impossible. For one thing, although the depth
3 here is approximately say 10 feet on average across
4 Shallow Bay, further offshore it's shallower than it is
5 here. It's less than 6 feet and you're not going to move
6 a very large piece of ice in through 6 feet of water, or
7 even 10 feet.

8 Q What would your view be
9 of the possibility though, of ice scour occurring at break-
10 up in Shallow Bay ?

11 A I've flown over Shallow
12 Bay at times when there were large ice jams in Shallow
13 Bay. I think there is certainly a very definite possibility
14 that scour does occur. I couldn't make any guess whatsoever
15 on the magnitude or the frequency of that scour.

16 Q By magnitude, I take it you
17 mean depth.

18 A How deep, how wide, certainly
19 ly. Well the only guess I would make is that it would be
20 a lot less severe than the offshore scouring which occurs
21 under the pressure of the polar pack.

22 Q I take it, Mr. Shearer,
23 you would agree with that as well; that any ice scour
24 that may occur through break-up and water pressure would
25 carry with it less destructive force than polar pack ice
26 scour.

27 WITNESS SHEARER: Correct,
28 much less.

29 Q Now Mr. Lewis would you
30 turn to D-E, the D-E line on that diagram, the one with

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 the very deep hole, and could I ask you for your views as
2 to what might cause that ?

3 WITNESS LEWIS: Yes, you could.

4 Q Would you answer, please?

5 A As Mr. Shearer said, since
6 the feature does not appear on the A-B line, it is possibly
7 probably not a channel, and therefore is a hole of some
8 sort. As to what might have caused that hole, there are
9 a number of possibilities, one of which is the melting
10 out of ground ice in the sediments beneath Shallow Bay.
11 I don't think that is a very likely possibility.

12 Q Why not ?

13 A This kind of thing can occur
14 along the Tuk Peninsula or the Yukon coast, where there
15 are large thick layers of massive ground ice in the sed-
16 iments, but to my knowledge there have been no large thick
17 layers of massive ground ice found in the sediments of
18 the modern Mackenzie Delta. So I think that's an unlikely
19 explanation .

20 A perhaps more possible one is
21 that in the channels of the Mackenzie Delta , this is on
22 the delta plain itself, we find holes which look very much
23 like this hole in their echo sounding traces. They tend to
24 form in the channels. They tend to form near bends in the
25 channel and they're associated with turning of the flow,
26 possibly with ice jamming-- with flow around ice jamming,
27 and I think some mechanism of that ^{sort} would be a more likely
28 origin for the hole.

29 Q How fast does a hole like
30 that fill in, given the sediment load in Shallow Bay ?

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 A I have no idea. I do know
2 that sediment is moving rapidly through the channels of
3 the Mackenzie Delta, and yet you find scour holes of
4 greater magnitude, greater size ^{depth} than this which persists
5 throughout years. They last throughout the season and they
6 last from year to year and they tend to stay in the same
7 place. So it's possible on the delta plain, for a hole of
8 that size to exist and to continue to exist, in spite of
9 the movement of sediment, because of the current pattern.

10 Q Yes, when you say the delta
11 plain, do you take in Shallow Bay, or--

12 A I don't. On, when I talk
13 about the delta plain I'm talking about channel flow and
14 I think in a relatively narrow channel , certainly narrow
15 in comparison to Shallow Bay.

16 Q Is that sufficient flow
17 in Shallow Bay to produce that kind of hole ?

18 A I'm surprised at seeing it.

19 Q So, while it's a more likely
20 explanation, it's still not all that likely.

21 A It's very much conjecture,
22 yes. I don't know of any direct data available on currents
23 in Shallow Bay; certainly currents which might cause some-
24 thing like this.

25 Q Sticking with the delta
26 plain, does that kind of hole, caused by current appear
27 suddenly, or does it take years to build up ?

28 A I have no idea. My exper-
29 ience with scour holes on the-- and we're not talking
30 about ice scour here-- my experience with scour holes con-

O Now, Mr. Shearer, after

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 reading the report and looking at the echo sounder scan
2 closely, do you have any further comments on the informat-
3 ion revealed there, in so far as ice scour or water scour
4 is concerned ?

5 WITNESS SHEARER: No, I don't,
6 just a clarification of your last question to Mr. Lewis.
7 You meant ice scour when you said scour, is this correct ?

8 Q Yes.

9 A O.K. I would agree that
10 that particular hole is not an ice scour feature.

11 Q And the markings on the
12 D-E line,-- of the A-B line, sorry, of which there are
13 a number would be unlikely to have been caused by ice
14 scour.

15 A I agree.

16 Q I take it though, you
17 would both agree that if echo sounding were done right
18 after breakup one might anticipate a line showing the
19 results of ice scour.

20 A Correct.

21 Q Mr. Lewis?

22 WITNESS LEWIS: Correct.

23 Q Now Mr. Lewis, let me move
24 to your evidence if I might please. You spoke to us
25 yesterday on page three of what you called segmented
26 circulation patterns, and I think you said you'd divided
27 the coast up into a number of segments, and sediment sinks
28 exist, as you put it, within the segments. Is that correct ?

29 A Yes, it is.

30 Q And they collect sediment

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 and would therefore collect oil.

2 A Oil would tend to move
3 toward the sediment sink of each segment.

4 Q Ah-- And you said, as I
5 understood you, that these sinks also spawn life because
6 of the existence of the sediment.

7 A Yes.

8 Q Now, you as well said that
9 lagoons exist, as I understood you, where there may not
10 be the similiar high life content as there is in these
11 sediment sinks.

12 A I don't believe I mentioned
13 their life content. I would see no reason why the lagoons
14 would have any lower biologic component-- why some lagoons
15 would have a lower biologic component than other areas and
16 other sinks.

17 Q Sorry . You referred to
18 certain areas, perhaps newly breached lakes that you said
19 might serve as appropriate places to put oil once it had
20 been spilled.

21 A The context of that remark
22 is first of all that it's made from the point of view of
23 preventing a spread of a spill. However, within the
24 breached lake or lagoon, or whatever it was, there would
25 be a tremendous amount of damage done, so I certainly
26 wouldn't say at all that these areas are any lower in
27 biological productivity; that great damage would occur, but
28 the idea would be to limit the extent of that damage.

29 Q And I assume that if the
30 biologists told us that there were lagoons or breached

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 lakes that were of low life content, they would be by far
2 the best places to localize any spill that occurred.

3 A I assume they would. From
4 my talks with the biologists, they haven't mentioned any-
5 thing like this.

6 Q Yes. I wonder if assuming
7 those lagoons could be postulated to exist, whether your
8 theory of sediment sinks could be used to combine with
9 such lagoons, so that spilled oil on its way to the sink,
10 so to speak, might be diverted into lagoons of low biolog-
11 ical content. Is that a feasible theoretical way of con-
12 trolling oil spills?

13 A It's a theoretical way that
14 one might do it. I think the problem with the whole sit-
15 uation there is that in lagoon areas, in sediment sink
16 areas there's very little water depth and it would be
17 very hard to operate in those areas. So, although it would
18 be a nice idea, the feasibility of it is another question.

19 Q You're very dubious about
20 the feasibility because of the lack of water depth?

21 A Yes.

22 Q

23 At page four of paragraph 23 of your evidence you
24 told us a good deal about spits, bars, and beaches, and
25 low lying delta areas as being both biologically import-
26 ant and exposed to inundation from storm surges. There are
27 I take it, behind the spits and bars, low lying coastal
28 areas, which as well may be at risk from such spills.

29 A Except in front of delta
30 areas, or in the immediate vicinity of delta areas, usually

1 behind spits, bars, and lagoons, there are cliffs of
2 varying heights, so that the area which is subject to
3 inundation by sea water behind the spits, bars and lagoons
4 would, in most cases, not be great.

5 Q There are though, many areas
6 along the coast which are comparable to the low lying
7 delta areas, in terms of their exposure to storm surges.
8 I'm thinking for example of a number of the areas along
9 the Tuk Peninsula itself.

10 A The lake basins for example.

11 Q Yes.

12 A Yes.

13 Q And there's no doubt that
14 storm surges pose a real risk to those areas, as well as
15 the low lying delta areas.

16 A They do pose a real risk to
17 those areas. In a partially drained lake you're talking
18 about a water surface. You don't have the same extent of
19 above normal tide low lying land, for example, that you
20 would have on a delta.

21 Q I see. So the threat to low
22 lying land is mainly concentrated in the delta, rather
23 than the coastal areas.

24 A I would think the major
25 threat is to the delta areas. The various spits, bars,
26 and lagoons are a second major area.

27 Q You spoke, as well in connection
28 with storm surges of the driftwood line that you
29 notionally drew across the delta, or the outer delta, as
30 I think you referred to it. Just so we'll have it's locat-

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 ion, much like the Barry route, where does that line fall
2 in relation to the Shallow Bay crossing. There's no doubt
3 it's in shore of the Shallow Bay crossing.

4 A On the west side of Shallow
5 Bay, which is an older, higher part of the delta, the
6 driftwood line appears to be quite close to the edge of
7 Shallow Bay. On the east side, however, the driftwood line
8 is considerably south of the proposed pipeline crossing.

9 Q Yes, and continues to run
10 south of the cross delta route as I recall.

11 A It runs south of the cross
12 delta route from the east side of Shallow Bay, all the way
13 over to Richards Island.

14 Q Right. Until you pick up the
15 main north-south line, which the driftwood line crosses
16 at some point.

17 A Yes.

18 Q Now, what about the production
19 plants or the scrubbing plants at Nig, whatever it is and
20 Taglu.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Niglintgak.

22 MR: GOUDGE: Thank you sir.

23 Q Are they north of the drift-
24 wood line as well ?

25 WITNESS LEWIS: I'm not comp-
26 letely familiar with the locations-- proposed locations
27 for those plants, or on what type of land form they're on.
28 I know they are north of the driftwood line.

29 Q I see. That's the question
30 I was asking you. You know that, there's no doubt the

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 driftwood line comes to the south.

2 A Assuming that they're on
3 the modern delta.

4 Q Well, you know where they're
5 proposed to be located.

6 A Generally.

7 Q Yes, and you know that
8 their proposed location is to the north of the drift-
9 wood line you spoke of.

10 A Yes.

11 Q Now, finally in connection
12 with storm surges, and simply to assist my understanding,
13 Mr. Milne mentioned yesterday that there can be winter
14 storm surges. You didn't refer to this in your evidence and
15 I'm wondering whether you're familiar with winter storm
16 surges.

17 A Yes, I am.

18 Q He spoke of one in particul-
19 ar that took place I think in January,
20 1974.

21 A Yes.

22 Q I take it these are surges
23 which occur before the land fast ice freezes entirely.

24 A I don't know.

25 Q I'm curious as to how a
26 storm surge can occur which affects water levels if there's
27 a complete ice cover.

28 A We're getting beyond my field
29 of expertise. I'm familiar with the particular storm which
30 occurred in January of 1974.

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q Well, let me ask you about
2 that. Did that occur after the landfast ice had moved out
3 to the pack ice ?

4 A I don't know. I do know that
5 the landfast ice from Shingle Point, excuse me, from King
6 Point which is west of Shingle Point as far as the Alaska
7 border and as far as I went offshore which was 20 or 30
8 miles, was broken up into pieces by that storm. I also
9 know that from talking with Bob Mackenzie at Herschel
10 Island, who happened to have been at Kay Point during that
11 storm, that Kay Point spit was completely flooded, that
12 the Babbage Delta was completely flooded by water during
13 that storm.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: What
15 was the date of that storm ?

16 A It was in early January 1974.

17 MR. GOUDGE:

18 Q I think it was January 6th,
19 sir 1974, and my only concern was to know how you could
20 have a storm surge once the landfast ice had solidified
21 and met up with the pack ice, and I take it, Mr. Lewis,
22 you're simply not able to assist us on that.

23 A I really can't comment on
24 that.

25 Q Now on page five of your
26 prepared evidence--

27 THE COMMISSIONER: You're
28 saying, where do you get the water from ?

29 MR. GOUDGE: Yes sir. I just
30 don't understand that. I take it just to complete it
Mr. Lewis, the only winter storm surges that you know about

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 are surges that took place when there was, either as a
2 result of the storm, or before the storm, open water to
3 be blown around by the storm ?

4 WITNESS LEWIS: I'm not sure
5 whether the open water, in the case of the January storm
6 I talked about was cause or effect; whether it was there
7 before the surge occurred or whether the surge occurred
8 and caused it.

9 Q On page five of your pre-
10 pared evidence, you spoke to us about a possible circulat-
11 ion as a result of the storm surge, inward from Shallow
12 Bay, right across the delta with drainage out the East
13 Channel. I take it that is in some sense a worst case and
14 how likely is it to happen?

15 A Well, as I said, we really
16 have no idea of what the circulation pattern over flooded
17 areas of the delta would be during a storm surge. I men-
18 tioned a possibility of salt water being drawn in on the
19 Shallow Bay side, and fresh water being diverted out East
20 Channel, solely on the basis of a model study done by
21 Dr. Henry, taking a typical storm surge, and plotting the
22 changes in water level at the shoreline caused by that
23 model storm surge. In his model he discovered that
24 because of the offshore geometry that, during that surge
25 you could expect a three meter rise at the head of Shallow
26 Bay, and at the same time only a one and a half meter rise
27 at the mouth of East Channel, and this suggested to me the
28 possibility of water moving from the higher area in Shallow
29 Bay toward East Channel. But this is very very speculative
30 because modeling a surge is one thing, but here we don't

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 just have a surge, we have a river and the river was not
2 included in the model, and to ignore the river on the
3 Mackenzie Delta is obviously a major fault in the model.

4 Q Yes. Were that to occur
5 though, and were it to occur at the time of construction
6 in

7 Shallow Bay, obviously there would be a consequence that
8 for the East Channel, by way of transportation of mater-
9 ials from Shallow Bay.

10 A If oil was included in the
11 water, which is the context I was talking about it in, it
12 might be possible then for oil to be drawn in and dropped
13 on the modern delta, in spite of the river discharge coming
14 out the other way. On the delta, a surge can cause flooding
15 of large areas, as I've talked about with respect to the
16 areas south of the driftwood line. But of that area we
17 don't know what percentage of it would be covered by river
18 water and what percentage of it would be covered by salt
19 water.

20 Q Nonetheless this represents
21 a specific example, theoretical though it may be, of a
22 reversal of flow; that is, into Shallow Bay as opposed to
23 out of Shallow Bay.

24 A Yes, it does.

25 Q This is a specific example
26 of a general phenomenon that can occur in the delta as
27 a result of storm surges, or even spring floods, is it not
28 The reversal of flow ?

29 A In a sense. A storm surge
30 which causes a rise in sea level can back up the river water
and cause the levels of water in the river to rise, regard-

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 less of what is happening at the upstream end. The current
2 is still in a downstream direction in the main delta
3 channel. What it can do however, is to cause flow from those
4 delta channels into the many delta lakes, which are connect-
5 ed by minor sub channels.

6 Q Yes, and that is a reversal
7 of the normal flow caused by the surge.

8 A Well, those channels are
9 reversing flow channels, in that when the water level in
10 the major distributary channels is rising, water will flow
11 from the channel into the lake. When the water level on
12 the major distributary channel is falling, water will
13 flow from the lake into the distributary.

14 Q Yes, and I take it there are
15 perhaps two general sets of circumstances where that may
16 happen. A storm surge may cause a reversal of flow into
17 the delta lakes, or spring breakup may cause a reversal of
18 flow into the delta lakes.

19 A Yes, or additionally
20 summer rainstorm floods in the river basin.

21 Q Yes, and this reversal of
22 flow tendency is something that is obviously a factor to
23 be seriously considered in terms of the carriage of any
24 polluting material in the delta.

25 A Yes, it is.

26 Q In other words, polluting
27 material spilled in the delta may be carried downstream
28 in ordinary circumstances or may be carried back up into
29 the delta lakes when you get this reversal of flow.

30 A Yes it could.

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Coudge

1 Q Now sir, pages six and seven
2 of your prepared evidence, you spoke to us of the difficul-
3 ties of stabilizing permafrost coasts, and in particular
4 you've spoken to us, both yesterday and earlier about the
5 coast near Tuk, as being a coast that provides great dif-
6 ficulty because of erosion.

7 A It provides great difficulty
8 because of erosion, due to the presence of massive ground
9 ice.

10 Q Yes. I wonder whether you've
11 given any thought to any ways that might be used to stab-
12 ilize that erosion, and let's take the Tuk coast around
13 Tuk as an example.

14 A I've given thought to it.
15 I've been involved in consultations with the people at the
16 Department of Public Works, who are directly concerned with
17 the problem of attempting to stabilize the shoreline around
18 Tuk. It's a very difficult problem.

19 I could say that in the long term,
20 the sea is going to win.

21 Q What can be done in the
22 meantime to prolong the agony?

23 A Well, one thing is to ensure
24 that there is a supply of material to the beaches in front
25 of the cliffs which protect the cliffs. The second thing
26 is some structure; some engineering structure of some
27 sort to decrease wave attack during a storm on the cliff.

28 Q A break-water, I suppose.

29 A That would be one possibility.

30 Q So, you need stabilizing

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 material, on the one hand, and engineering devices as well.

2 A Yes.

3 Q Yes, and by stabilizing
4 material would you be thinking of riprap for example?

5 A Yes, that would be a possibility.
6

7 Q Now the Tuk coast is but one
8 example, I take it , of the general problem you recited
9 of eroding coastal areas, which you said posed a threat
10 ^{to} to the bringing ashore of pipelines.

11 A Yes.

12 Q Yes, and I take it, you see
13 that threat arising from the rapidly changing coastline
14 due to erosion.

15 A Yes, and particularly to
16 the presence of massive ground ice, both in cliffs and
17 beneath the sea bottom, in the shallow water areas.

18 Q You're not suggesting though
19 are you that the entire coast is of that character.

20 A No I'm not.

21 Q In fact there are many places
22 along the coast where it would be possible to run a flow-
23 line ashore without running into the kind of problem you're
24 speaking of.

25 A Yes.

26 Q For example, in bays which
27 may have a shallow gradient, for example, there may not
28 be the kind of erosion problem you speak of.

29 A I would think that anywhere
30 that massive ice is not a major factor, would be a much

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 safer area to bring a flowline in shore.

2 Q And those areas do exist
3 in considerably large numbers along the coastal area that
4 you spoke of, in general terms.

5 A Yes they do.

6 Q Now as to spits and bars, you
7 spoke about them to us in some detail, and there's no
8 doubt, as I understand you that they both grow and shrink
9 through deposits on the one hand-- well let me ask you, do
10 they both grow ? You showed us slides of the growth of
11 spits, for example . Are there any circumstances under
12 which their size would diminish ?

13 A Their size would diminish if
14 for any reason, the supply of material to them was changed,
15 decreased.

16 Q What kind of speed are we
17 talking about on the growth side, with these spits ?

18 A I believe I mentioned a
19 figure for Nunaluk Spit of over 2000 feet in 18-20 years.

20 Q And do you have any examples
21 of the opposite process, where a spit or a bar has decreased
22 in size due to the interruption of the supply to it.

23 A No, we don't.

24 Q I see. So you can't tell us
25 anything obviously about the speed at which that might
26 happen.

27 A No.

28 Q Now, earlier, when you gave
29 evidence before this Inquiry, in December, and again yes-
30 terday, you spoke in some detail of the dredging or the

1 possibility of dredging a permanent harbour at Tuktoyaktuk.
2 I take it, from your evidence that you feel that is possible
3 without permanently affecting the erosion of the cliffs,
4 provided the spoil is put in the right place.

5 A To the best of my knowledge,
6 it would be a possibility if the supply of sediment to
7 the beaches in front of Tuktoyaktuk is not interrupted,
8 and if , by placing any spoil from dredging on the down-
9 stream side of the channel, if that spoil will be redist-
10 ributed and continue on its way in front of the cliffs,
11 then I would say it would be a less serious situation.

12 Q I think you said last time
13 when you were here, that to produce this harbour you would
14 have to dredge some distance offshore.

15 A Yes, I did.

16 Q Yes, and you put it in terms
17 of miles but you didn't specify how many miles.

18 A No, it was a topic that had
19 been brought up ,on the spur of the moment, so to speak,
20 and I hadn't prepared.

21 Q Without asking you to do
22 something that you're not willing to do, would you be
23 prepared to put a mileage figure on the dredging required
24 to produce a permanent harbour at Tuk ? How many miles
25 offshore would you have to dredge ?

26 A I still wouldn't be prepared
27 because I still have not seen any of the plans for the
28 dredging, and I still do not know to what depth they plan
29 to dredge.

30 Q I take it though, that your

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 concern would be satisfied if the material taken from the
2 bottom, in dredging, were placed on the downstream side
3 of the opening to the harbour.

4 A I'm a bit hesitant about
5 saying yes. My concern would be considerably decreased.
6 I'll go that far.

7 Q Without doing that, you would
8 say the effect, the added erosive effect on the cliffs
9 would be very substantial.

10 A I think it would be, yes.

11 Q Yes. Assuming that the
12 initial dredging spoil were placed downstream, and that
13 the opening were kept dredged and that the continued
14 dredging spoil was put downstream, is that sufficient to
15 keep the cliffs from eroding faster than naturally?

16 A The reason I'm hesitating
17 is because I'm not clear in my own mind about the processes,
18 the rates at which sediment would be picked up again after
19 it had been deposited as spoil and moved along the cliffs.
20 So, while I think that that would certainly decrease any
21 damage that might occur along the cliffs at Tuk, I'm not
22 willing to make that an absolute.

23 Q Until more study is done of
24 what might happen to spoil deposited downstream, and
25 where it might go.

26 A Yes, and until more study is done
27 as to what is happening now, under natural conditions; how
28 much is moving, when it moves--

29 Q How much sediment is contin-
30 uing to be deposited at the cliff base, so to speak.

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 A Yes.

2 MR. BAYLY: Perhaps Mr. Goudge
3 could repeat that. We had the answer and question going
4 at the same time.

5 MR. GOUDGE: Did you get that?
6 Well, the answer's all I'm interested in.

7 MR. BAYLY: The answer was
8 just 'yes' what was the question?

9 MR. GOUDGE: I think, Mr.
10 Lewis, you and I are in agreement that-- about something.

11 THE COMMISSIONER: Why don't you tell
12 us, Mr. Lewis, where you stand on this.

13 WITNESS LEWIS: On the sort
14 of general situation of dredging, you're talking? My
15 stand is that there is undoubtedly a considerable quantity
16 of material moving from the north, south toward Tuktoy-
17 aktuk. It provides a significant part of the material on
18 the beach, in front of the cliffs, at Tuk settlement, and
19 this material is--, this beach material protects the cliffs
20 from even more rapid rates of erosion than are presently
21 occurring.

22 Now, if we dredge a channel in the
23 near shore zone, to open up the harbour at Tuk; now this
24 would be north of the settlement, we would interrupt the
25 along shore movement of material; if this material is
26 placed-- this dredged material is placed on the downstream,
27 the downdrift side of the dredged channel, I think it is
28 possible that the damage will-- that possible damage to
29 the cliffs at Tuk, through a decrease in supply, will
30 be minimal, but I'm not prepared without much more evidence

1 on what is going on at the present time, and what might
2 go on if this action is taken. Until that is known, I'm
3 not prepared to say definitely that it would cause no
4 damage.

5 MR. GOUDGE:

6 Q Now sir, this dredging of
7 the harbour, I take it, would in your view, would be a
8 specific example of, well what you would want to know
9 before you would feel sanguine about it going ahead, would
10 be similiar to what you would want to know before you
11 would be sanguine about the removal of gravel from spits,
12 for example.

13 A Most definitely so.

14 Q Yes. Now let me come to the
15 theory that you put to us yesterday about delta sediment
16 compaction. As I understand you, you say that you feel
17 there may be a possibility of compaction occuring in the
18 sediments of Shallow Bay.

19 A Yes.

20 Q And that is because this
21 is an old part of the delta ?

22 A That is because it's a
23 part of the delta, which may have recently thawed and
24 therefore may be subject to natural consolidation of the
25 thawed material.

26 Q I take it, you mean may be
27 thawing; that is permafrost under Shallow Bay may be in
28 the process of thawing.

29 A Yes.

30 Q And as a result, creating

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 newly thawed sediments, which may, over time, compact.

2 A Yes.

3 Q I take it, before any prediction
4 ion could be made about the kind of compaction that might
5 be anticipated, you would have to know first the rate that
6 the permafrost was thawing, and secondly the nature of
7 the sediments to determine what kind of compaction would
8 occur when they thawed.

9 A Yes.

10 Q And that task, I take it,
11 is one that would, in your view, require a good deal of
12 research.

13 A It would require significant-
14 ly more than is known at the present time. I don't make
15 any claims to be an expert in the consolidation theory. I
16 brought the point up only because, as one reads the liter-
17 ature on world deltas, one of the major topics is on con-
18 solidation of the sediments, and yet when one looks at the
19 literature, the work being done on the Mackenzie Delta, the
20 topic is not mentioned. So I thought it was perhaps time
21 that it should be mentioned and should be considered.

22 Q And possibly studied ?

23 A Yes definitely.

24 Q Would you extend this theory
25 of compaction beyond simply Shallow Bay, to low lying
26 parts of the delta ? Let me perhaps elaborate that. There's
27 no doubt that there's permafrost over large areas of the
28 low lying delta, that should something happen to the sur-
29 face cover, melting of the permafrost might occur, and that
30 the sediments thereby melted, might be subject to compact-

Shearer & Lewis
CROSS-Exam by Goudge

1 ion according to the theory you gave us yesterday.

2 A I think this is a definite
3 possibility and I think it's illustrated by the fact that
4 lakes are forming on the outer delta plain at the present
5 time through ponding of water, due to some cause ^{or} other,
6 subsequent degredation of the permafrost and perhaps the
7 consolidation after that point. So any process-- any action
8 which for example removed surface vegetation which might
9 change the thermal regime, and hence the thickness of the
10 active layer, which might lead to ponding; could lead to
11 the development of a lake, and that the process would tend
12 to accelerate because, once you have a pond and you have
13 a thawed area underneath the pond that can then expand so--

14 Q You need a triggering event
15 and once you get that, your theory comes into operation.

16 A I think that's a definite
17 possibility.

18 Q Now, let me move to perma-
19 frost distribution in the delta, and let me ask you this
20 general question. Could you provide us with your view as
21 to the general distribution of permafrost in the outer
22 delta? Is it a continuous thing or spotty, or what?

23 A I'm making my statements
24 purely on the basis of what I have read in the literature
25 and on direct experience in other older, more southerly
26 parts of the delta.

27 Permafrost has been measured to
28 depths of 60-100 feet in the outer delta. In all areas of
29 the delta; wherever there is a lake which does not freeze
30 to the bottom in winter, or a channel which does not freeze

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 to the bottom in winter, there will be an unfrozen zone
2 underneath those water bodies which may extend right through
3 the permafrost. So we have a perforated situation. We have
4 general permafrost and wherever there is lake or a channel
5 we have a hole perhaps through the permafrost.

6 The other characteristic of perma-
7 frost in the outer delta is that it is a grading; it is
8 not an equilibrium. This is found out from direct measur-
9 ments, so it is a grading at the bottom. It is extending
10 itself deeper. It is also a grading at the top as new
11 sediment is deposited on the outer delta, the active
12 layer thickness would tend to stay much the same and the
13 frost table would move up, so it's a grading in both
14 directions.

15 Q How does that square with
16 the relative thicknesses that may be found throughout the
17 delta, and I'm speaking here of what we were told by the
18 producers, where for example, at Taglu we've been told
19 there are about 1600 feet of permafrost, whereas at Nig
20 there are 500 feet and perhaps at some points along the
21 cross-delta route, such as under the lakes or channels,
22 that you spoke of, no permafrost.

23 A Well the gas plants are at
24 the edge of the modern delta and it looks to me that they
25 are near the Pleistocene delta, which is a much older part
26 of the delta, which has a much thicker permafrost beneath
27 it, and from looking at this report that you gave me dur-
28 ing the coffee break that there is gravel beneath modern
29 delta sediments. Now in the Shallow Bay area, further west
30 and in the Ellice Island area, it is all modern delta and

Shearer & Lewis
CROSS-Exam by Goudge

1 it's all new sediments, so perhaps I think in the Taglu
2 area you're dealing with an older material which has a
3 thin veneer of modern sediments on top of it.

4 Q Let me ask you about one
5 other piece of this rather complex picture, and that is
6 do you have any knowledge about the presence of
7 thawed zones within the permafrost? Does that occur in the
8 delta, as far as you know ?

9 A Yes.

10 Q And by, within the perma-
11 frost I mean, within it, looking at it from the side, rather
12 than from the top.

13 A Yes. The holes, of course
14 beneath lakes and channels would be called tallicks. Also
15 it seems that in some parts of the delta, at least, where-
16 ver you have a permanent winter snow drift, thick snow
17 drift, there is a significant degradation in the perma-
18 frost table. At the place where I worked near Reindeer
19 station there's a permanent-- a thick snowdrift which
20 occurs every year along the side of a channel, and the
21 depth to permafrost beneath that snowdrift is about
22 35 feet, so that's an unfrozen layer caused by another
23 process on the delta.

24 Q In general terms then, there's
25 no doubt that the permafrost regime in the delta is one
26 that has many complexities.

27 A Yes.

28 Q Finally sir, let me turn to
29 what you can assist us with on your knowledge on Mackenzie
30 Delta sediments. To begin with I take it, you've done a

1 good deal of work in this area.

2 A Yes, I have.

3 Q And in particular, your
4 doctoral work is related to this area.

5 A Yes, it is.

6 Q What can you tell us about
7 the different kinds of materials that comprise the near
8 surface part of the delta ? What kinds of materials are
9 we speaking of ?

10 A In terms of texture of the
11 mineral sediments we're speaking of anything up to a fine
12 sand, perhaps medium sand at the coarsest, with large
13 quantities of silt and also large quantities of clay so
14 very fine sediments; essentially no gravel in the modern
15 sediments except that which may have been ice rafted down
16 from further up the river. We also are speaking of a
17 fairly large proportion of organic material. As I mentioned
18 yesterday it's not a large proportion in comparison with
19 other deltas of the world, but it would certainly be a
20 large proportion in comparison to most of the spits and
21 bars, for example along the coast.

22 So, two major components then;
23 the mineral component, being very fine, and the organic
24 component.

25 Q And can you make any
26 comment for us on the differing engineering properties of
27 those two materials, in their various states, frozen and
28 unfrozen.

29 A Perhaps, could you be a bit
30 more specific?

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 Q Well, let's take the mineral
2 component , if you will, of the delta, first. What comments
3 would you make on the engineering properties of that
4 substance as a support for construction or for a pipeline ?

5 A I think that you can't
6 really look at it without considering the fact that it's
7 frozen and its engineering properties are related to a
8 great extent, the fact that it is frozen, and that any
9 activity that thawed it, would cause problems that might
10 not occur in a more southerly location.

11 Q And in a thawed state, I
12 take it, because it is fine sediment, it may be subject to
13 very substantial erosion or compaction .

14 A It would be subject to
15 compaction. It is a cohesive sediment because it is so
16 fine. It has the ability to form vertical walls. A sand
17 for example, a pure sand would not. It would tend to be
18 deposited at its angle of repose which would be consider-
19 ably less than a vertical cliff. So, I'll stop there
20 for the moment.

21 Q Now, I take it, there are,
22 amongst these sediments, lake deposits, levee deposits,
23 and for example, point bar deposits.

24 A Yes.

25 Q And do those sort of sub-
26 compartments display any differences between them if
27 thawed after being frozen.

28 A Well, channel bottom deposits
29 and point bar deposits; that is deposits associated with
30 active river processes tend to be coarser. They're the

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 sands which you find on the delta, and would have the
2 engineering properties of sands. No massive ice, no
3 significant access ice.

4 Lake sediments, on the other
5 hand are much finer, have a higher organic content usually,
6 running 20-30 percent clay and would have all the problems
7 associated with construction on clays. Levee sediments are
8 somewhere in between. They represent material which is
9 deposited by the river as it floods its banks. Most of
10 the material tends to be deposited right at the edge of
11 the channel banks and to build up to form a levee, and
12 this is generally in what we would call a silt, finer
13 than the channels but coarser than the lakes.

14 Q Yes, and these three cate-
15 gories that you've spoken about are all found in the delta.

16 A Throughout the delta.

17 Q Yes.

18 A Both on the present surface
19 and at depth where you might run into an abandoned channel
20 which has been buried, you could find the whole spectrum
21 at depth.

22 Q Yes, and I take it, the
23 complexities presented by these three categories might
24 be worthy of study in advance of construction or engineer-
25 ing.

26 A Very definitely. People tend
27 to classify the modern delta as a unit in comparison to
28 various parts of the areas surrounding it, but--

29 Q What's your comment on that ?

30 A It's a very, very complex

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 unit and very variable within itself and I think we tend
2 to forget that.

3 Q Yes. Breaking down the unit,
4 would you like to break it down beyond the three sub-cate-
5 gories that I referred you to earlier or is that a satis-
6 factory break-down for the purposes of engineering planning?

7 A I think that the-- we have
8 deposits associated with river channels, delta channels.
9 We have deposits associated with delta lakes and we have
10 the gradational deposits between the two and I think that
11 would certainly be--

12 Q Those are the three main
13 sub-categories.

14 A Yes, in terms of the sediments.

15 Q Yes.

16 A Within those sediments we
17 have the various manifestations of frozen ground, includ-
18 ing ice wedges, which-- and the development of ice wedge
19 type typography which creates its own, perhaps different
20 group.

21 Q Its own problems ?

22 A M-hm.

23 Q So that the ice content is
24 an aspect of the problem, I take it, as well, varying organ-
25 ic contents within the three sub-categories might produce
26 differing engineering effects.

27 A Yes.

28 Q So the picture's complex.

29 A Very.

30 Q Now, lastly, Mr. Lewis, you

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 say on page five that the Mackenzie is one of the largest
2 deltas in the world, and I take it, that you say it's
3 8000 square miles approximately.

4 A That is the area of the sub-
5 aerial delta plain; that is the delta plain above normal
6 tide.

7 THE COMMISSIONER: What do
8 you mean, modern delta ?

9 A We talked about the modern
10 delta as the currently active delta, and Richards Island
11 and the Tuk Peninsula is often called the Pleistocene
12 delta.

13 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, the
14 old delta.

15 A It's an abandoned Mackenzie
16 Delta, an old one.

17 THE COMMISSIONER: Now, the
18 8000 square miles, is the modern delta or the modern delta
19 plus the old delta ?

20 A Just the modern delta.

21 THE COMMISSIONER: Right.

22 MR. GOUDGE:

23 Q What would the modern delta
24 plus the old delta constitute ? Do you have any idea ?

25 A I really don't know, and I
26 should add, of course that the Mackenzie Delta doesn't stop
27 at the shoreline; that there is a further very large area
28 in the near shore which is generally classified by most
29 people who study deltas, as being part of the delta plain. I
30 believe represents another 3-4000 square kilometers. I'd

Shearer & Lewis
CROSS-Exam by Goudge

1 convert that but I did the measurement in kilometers so
2 I can remember it.

3 Q Let me ask you, where, in
4 terms of world order, the Mackenzie Delta would rank in
5 terms of size.

6 A It would be in the top ten.

7 Q How close to the top ?

8 A I don't know.

9 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, you're
10 ranking it with the Nile, the Amazon, the Mississippi
11 and the Niger and so forth. Is that it?

12 A Yes, and even more important-
13 ly, with the Lena, and some of the big deltas in the
14 Soviet Union.

15 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes. This is
16 the only delta in the Arctic coast of North America of
17 anything like the same size as the Lena and these others.
18 Is that right?

19 A Yes, that is correct.

20 MR. GOUDGE:
21 Q Out of the top ten, Mr. Lewis,
22 how many others would be in Arctic surroundings?

23 A Two or three, I can't remem-
24 ber which, of the Soviet deltas.

25 Q Do they, in any way, approx-
26 imate the size of the Mackenzie ?

27 A They're larger than the
28 Mackenzie.

29 Q Are they similiar in charact-
30 er or do you know that ?

A I'm just very, very generally

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Goudge

1 familiar with them and they are similiar--

2 MR. MARSHALL: These questions
3 are geographic, Mr. Goudge. There was an interesting
4 article last two months on Siberia and the river Ob's
5 delta.

6 MR. GOUDGE: Maybe, Mr.
7 Marshall, you can give evidence this afternoon.

8 MR. HOLLINGWORTH: Is this
9 the hit-parade of deltas ?

10 THE COMMISSIONER: Is it on
11 your list of documents ?

12 MR. GOUDGE: It's better than
13 most.

14 WITNESS LEWIS: I must admit
15 I haven't seen the article that Mr. Marshall refers to,
16 but ^{yes} to my knowledge they are similiar, and the Yukon Delta
17 is somewhat similiar. The much smaller Colville Delta
18 on the Alaskan North Slope is very similiar.

19 MR. GOUDGE:

20 Q Although much smaller.

21 A Although much smaller.

22 MR. GOUDGE: Thank you. Those
23 are all the questions I have, Mr. Lewis.

24 THE COMMISSIONER: Well I
25 assume it must be around 12:30 or--

26 MR. EVANS: Mr. Commissioner
27 if we are going to be finished examining these witnesses,
28 I have one more question, of one these witnesses, that
29 I would address to Mr. Lewis.

30 THE COMMISSIONER: Go ahead.

2 Q Mr. Lewis, in respect to
3 artificial islands for drilling in shallow water areas,
4 now I understand that these are in many cases constructed
5 on top of deep deposits of sediments. Now constructing
6 it out of gravel or aggregate, could this result in islands
7 built for production purposes becoming unstable over their
8 life, say 20 years ?

12 Q Yes.

16 Q Yes, that's right Mr. Lewis.

20 Q You didn't wish to comment
21 further on that possibility ?

30 Q So, your position is that

1 you feel that before this is done that sufficient^{research} should
2 be carried out to determine what the effects would be ?

3 A Yes, and I'm sure it would
4 because I don't think that in that particular situation
5 where permafrost is absent, if it is absent, that it's
6 a different problem from that which has been run into by
7 engineers in many locations in the world, from that point
8 of view. It's a different problem in the sense that it's
9 in the Beaufort Sea, as we talked about yesterday, from
10 other points of view.

11 MR. EVANS: O.K. thank you.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: I take it
13 there's another panel ready to give evidence this after-
14 noon. I leave it to Counsel to decide whether they want
15 to hear their evidence in chief, and then adjourn, or
16 whether they would prefer to cross-examine the panel this
17 afternoon. I don't know how long their evidence in chief
18 is likely to take, but if it's anything like Dr. Milne's,
19 I think that's about all we could handle, this afternoon.

20 MR. GOUDGE: Sir, if we could
21 take their evidence in chief, it will take, I would think,
22 a couple of hours to read, then would probably elucidate
23 a better cross-examination if it were left until Monday.

24 MR. BAYLY: They're going to
25 be here over the weekend, so that we can start with them
26 again on Monday. It's not as compact as Mr. Milne's evid-
27 ence, I assure you and won't take as long.

28 THE COMMISSIONER: I'm not
29 complaining about Dr. Milne's evidence. It was very, very
30 important, but we had to be at the top of our form just

Shearer & Lewis
Cross-Exam by Evans

1 to absorb it as it went along.

2 MR. EVANS: Mr. Commissioner,
3 I'd be in favour of doing the evidence in chief, this
4 afternoon and then cross-examining first thing Monday
5 morning.

6 THE COMMISSIONER: Right, well
7 I think that you're in the majority.

8 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner,
9 I have the curriculum vital of witnesses on this panel
10 here and I'm going to photocopy it at lunch. It was just
11 given to me last night, and if Counsel want to see it be-
12 fore I photocopy it and then get a copy of it after lunch,
13 I'd be happy to show it to them when we adjourn.

14 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, I
15 should say that on my desk this morning there arrived from
16 a friend of mine who's in the department of Indian Affairs
17 a book containing the collected letters of Groucho Marx,
18 and if it's thought it should be entered as an exhibit I
19 would be happy to arrange that.

20 MR. BAYLY: I don't think that would
21 be relevant, Mr. Commissioner.

22 (LAUGHTER)

23 THE COMMISSIONER: We'll adjourn
24 till two, then.

25 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT]2:25 P.M.)
26
27
28
29
30

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

(PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 2:05 P.M.)

THE COMMISSIONER: Well, we'll

come to order.

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner, if

we can begin.

MR. GOUDGE: Just before Mr.

Bayly begins, sir, I meant to file at the end of the last panel as an exhibit, the report that I asked Messrs. Lewis and Shearer to comment on, perhaps I could do that now. I understand we can mark the exhibit, and Mr. Marshall can provide us with another copy for filing purposes.

MR. BAYLY: You have a new panel before you this afternoon, and if I can introduce them, they are from your left, Dr. Norm Snow, and Mr. R.K. Pettigrew, and Mr. William J. Logan. You have prepared evidence before you as well of Messrs. Pettigrew and Snow, and Mr. Logan is a member of the panel without prepared evidence, but who is available for cross-examination, and who may be able to assist in filling any gaps that there may be.

These witnesses have all been sworn.

R.K. PETTIGREW,

NORMAN SNOW,

WILLIAM J. LOGAN, sworn:

DIRECT EXAMINATION BY MR. BAYLY

Q I wonder if we could start from left to right, if you gentlemen could review your biographies as they relate to your experience, that is connected with the evidence that you're giving today.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Dr. Snow, could you begin?

2 WITNESS SNOW: My position is
3 acting head of Environmental Assessment Section of
4 Water, Lands, Forest and Environment Northern Natural
5 Resources and Environment Branch, Department of Indian
6 and Northern Affairs. I have a Bachelors of Science in
7 zoology from the University of South Hampton, and a
8 PHd in oceanography, also from South Hampton University.

9 My professional experience is
10 university lecturing in zoology at the University of
11 Manitoba, research into invertebrate physiology and
12 ecology of benthos and zooplankton, also at the University
13 of Manitoba.

14 I was engaged in environmental
15 impact research with the Department of the Environment,
16 for the Federal Government, in the Northwest Territories,
17 and also the Yukon; and environmental impact assessment
18 with the Federal Government, Department of Indian and
19 Northern Affairs, to date.

20 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Pettigrew?

21 WITNESS PETTIGREW: I attended
22 the University of Saskatchewan, and took a Bachelor's
23 Degree in geology; left the university in 1939. From
24 1945 until about 1970, which is about 25 years, I was
25 employed with Shell Oil Company in various parts of the
26 world, as an exploitation engineer, and production
27 engineer, associated with the development activities
28 of oil gas fields in Trinidad, British West Indies,
29 Venezuela, parts of the U.S.A. and Canada.

30 In 1971 I spent a year abroad

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 in Australia, North Africa, in geological engineering
2 consulting. In 1972 I joined the Environment Canada
3 in Ottawa, and spent a year with Policy Planning and
4 Research Director. The last three years I've been in
5 Edmonton with the Environmental Protection Service of
6 Environment Canada, and my work has been involved with
7 the development of an environmental emergency organization.
8 Some of the prime objectives have been to develop an
9 integrated response mechanism to spill emergencies,
10 reporting procedures, contingency planning, research and
11 development aspects.

12 Q Thank you. Mr. Logan,
13 would you review your qualifications as well for the
14 Inquiry, please?

15 WITNESS LOGAN: My educational
16 experience, primary education experience, was a Bachelor
17 of Applied Science degree in Mining Engineering from the
18 University of Toronto.

19 Following that, I spent from
20 1959 to 1971 in the base metal mining industry primarily
21 with Falconbridge Nickel Mines. The work was on mine -
22 mill development and operations and the areas of work
23 were Arctic and central Quebec, northern Manitoba, and
24 Ontario.

25 In 1971 to 1973, I did graduate
26 studies in fisheries biology at the University of
27 Guelph and then joined the Environmental Protection
28 Service on Environment Canada in Burlington Ontario.

29 I am presently the head of
30 the Center of Spill Technology and our prime responsibility
is development and assessment of countermeasures equipment
and techniques to combat accidental discharges of oil
and hazardous chemicals.

MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner,
copies of the biographies of these three panel members
have been filed with the Inquiry. If we could start with you Mr.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 | Pettigrew, I understand in the first instance you have
2 | some reports that were not listed with your evidence,
3 | that you may be referring to today, and if you could
4 | give the Inquiry the names of those and their authors
5 | for the record?

6 | WITNESS PETTIGREW: The first
7 | report I've used in some of the preparation of the
8 | submission, the title is "Oilspills and Spills of
9 | Hazardous Substances". This is a publication covering
10 | oil and special materials control division, division
11 | office of the Water Programs, program operations, U.S.
12 | Environmental Protection Agency, Washington. D.C., 20460.

13 | The second report is "Depart-
14 | mental Contingency Plan, Environmental Emergency",
15 | dated June 15, 1973, and this was developed by the
16 | Environmental Emergency Branch, in E.P.S., in Ottawa.

17 | The third report is an agreement
18 | between the Department of the Environment and the Ministry
19 | of Transport, with respect to responding to the problems
20 | of oilspills and other hazardous materials. The date is
21 | March 25, 1975. This was developed in Ottawa, between
22 | the two departments mentioned.

23 | The next report is a report of
24 | the Environment Canada Task Force, on the Mackenzie Valley
25 | Pipeline application, north of 60 degrees. This was
26 | developed under the chairmanship of Dr. Zoltai, Canadian
27 | Forestry Service, Edmonton, Alberta.

28 | The next report is a, "Review Of
29 | Petroleum Spill Containment Dykes In The North",
30 | developed by Environmental Emergency Branch, Edmonton,

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 September, 1974.

2 The last one is "Guidelines On
3 The Use And Acceptibility Of Oil Spill Dispersants",
4 developed by the Environmental Emergency Branch, Ottawa,
5 August 1973.

6 MR. BAYLY: Now, I understand,
7 Mr. Pettigrew, that before beginning with your prepared
8 text, you have a view graph that you'd like to refer to
9 and if we could could have the lights turned off perhaps --

10 A Just before we take a look
11 at one view graph, I have a few comments that I would
12 like to -- I'd like to lay just a little bit of ground
13 work before we look at that, if that's all right.

14 Q Please go ahead.

15 A As the submission will cover
16 various aspects of environmental emergencies, spill
17 emergencies, I believe that it will be of some value
18 to define a few of the terms that we're going to be
19 using, in a way to state briefly what we're trying to
20 do, and where I think we are in a state of preparedness;
21 a little bit about our objectives, and possibly areas
22 of concern. By doing this, as I said, with the aid of a
23 very few view graphs, possibly one or two slides a little
24 later on, I would hope that the content of the submission
25 covering contingency planning of the Mackenzie Valley
26 Pipeline, will be put into a little clearer perspective
27 and maybe made just a little easier to understand.

28 First of all, I think a definition
29 of what we think of as an "emergency", I should spell
30 this out. An environmental emergency is the sudden,

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 unexpected or apprehended introduction into the
2 environment of a pollutant in sufficient quantity to
3 pose a direct threat to man or other forms of life.

4 In E.P.S. and Environmental
5 Emergency Organization within E.P.S., a word on authority.
6 The authority for Environment Canada's response to an
7 environmental emergency, is derived from Federal
8 legislation, and primarily the Fisheries Act, the
9 Government Organization Act of 1970, and in addition
10 the Cabinet has directed Environment Canada to undertake
11 coordinating and related functions for Federal responses
12 to environmental emergencies. Our general policy is to
13 encourage development of a coordinated state of
14 preparedness, throughout Canada, by all governments and
15 industries, as well as to reduce the possibility of
16 environmental emergencies, through improved prevention.

17 A brief statement or two about
18 objectives. We -- one, to recommend and implement
19 effective preventative measures; two, delineate
20 responsibilities of all agencies by national contingency
21 plan for environmental emergencies from which integrated
22 operational plans can develop both regionally and
23 locally; three, to assess the threat of the ecological
24 sensitivity, and the national state of preparedness,
25 to conduct research and development, and evaluation of
26 environmental emergency technology, to coordinate a
27 provision of on-scene technical advice on environmental
28 matters, and to conduct on-scene operations when no
29 other agency has assumed responsibility for adequately
30 protecting the environment.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 In terms of a plan of action,
2 a few comments under that rather broad heading. We feel
3 it's important to encourage provinces, municipalities,
4 and the private sector to develop a capacity to respond
5 to environmental emergencies, and the Environment Canada
6 role should be one that shifts gradually towards one of
7 monitoring, and a provision of technical advice also
8 and including such things as data collection, evaluation
9 prevention, public information, research and development
10 of environmental emergency technology; we feel is an
11 important aspect of upgrading preparedness, to obtain
12 better equipment, and better techniques, and to provide
13 the type of knowledge that's required for training
14 purposes.

15 Still in this broad range
16 of action plan, we must rely on the expertise of other
17 elements of Environment Canada for advice and guidance
18 on environmental matters. This includes fisheries,
19 wildlife, et cetera. Those experts have been pre-
20 designated and made aware of the needs, and are available
21 on rather short notice.

22 I might point out here that
23 we have in E.P.S., in Ottawa, an Operations Center,
24 charged with collecting information on spills from
25 across Canada, spill events, emergency events. Theirs
26 is a communications and information role, for E.P.S. as
27 a whole. They have threat analysis capability, and
28 retrievable backup operational capability, and are linked
29 to a computer system in the States, from which we can
30 draw a good deal of technical information, if and when

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 required.

2 Organization structure is
3 required, in the form of a national contingency plan for
4 environmental emergencies. In order to spell out and
5 clarify who is responsible for what, and for what functions
6 are to be performed in times of spill emergencies, and
7 E.P.S. does have a responsibility to ensure that
8 contingency plans are comprehensive, and effective to the
9 degree that they ensure rapid response.

10 I would like to talk just for
11 a minute about what I refer to as a preparedness chart.
12 In my terms, this is a concept and this is something that
13 I'd like to just develop with you. It won't take very
14 long, maybe five minutes; but if we look at this, I think
15 this will be -- will lay a base line of understanding for
16 many of the things that are contained in the submission
17 that we'll be getting into.

18 Now on the vertical scale we've
19 got threat versus preparedness level. What we're really
20 comparing here -- there's four things really, and in order
21 to deal effectively with environmental emergencies, we
22 think it's essential to examine the matter as one that
23 involves a set of the parameters which you see defined there.
24 There's the threat, there's preparedness. Preparedness,
25 another word for preparedness is response capacity, there's
26 the risk, and all this is related to a time scale, across
27 the bottom. I'd like to point out that the threat level,
28 that horizontal line in red, fluctuates up and down to some
29 degree. It may not be a straight line but it's -- the
30 threat level is really affected by the increase in human

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 activity, the more drilling rigs that you have in the delta and
2 the Beaufort Sea, the more likelihood that there's going
3 to be something go wrong with one of them sooner or later.

4 The more trucks you have on a
5 highway hauling fuel, the more likelihood there's going
6 to be an accident and spill, that sort of thing.

7 Now, the threat level can be
8 affected or reduced by improved prevention, the small
9 green arrow on the right. The green line, the green
10 curved line, is the one of preparedness that I think is
11 the focus on this curve. Thinking about preparedness,
12 there are three basic elements to preparedness, and these
13 come from contingency planning.

14 There's the plan itself, contin-
15 gency plan, which is really the organization. There's
16 the trained personnel, to execute the plan. There's
17 equipment and material, and there is operational
18 improvements. Under that last category, you can't see
19 it from back there, operational improvements, include
20 research and developments, new equipment, new techniques,
21 and new knowledge. Also under operational improvements
22 there is training, transfer of knowledge, and training
23 of personnel to use new equipment and to become familiar
24 with new techniques.

25 The risk is the area between the
26 two curves, the one with threat level and preparedness.
27 and as we -- what is rather obvious in this concept really,
28 or approach, is that we reduce the risk by getting
29 prepared, and if we can bring these two lines together,
30 this is the objective.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Just before leaving this I would
2 point out that we're not very far, in my opinion we're
3 not very far along the line of preparedness. I suppose
4 it's only been four or five years that people have really
5 conscientiously begun to think about and plan for
6 and learn how to handle emergencies and particularly
7 spill emergencies under adverse conditions, under a
8 great variety that we know, and so this has been a
9 rather short learning phase. You can pretty well --
10 you can put a time frame on that bottom line, suit
11 yourselves. In my terms I look upon that as, if we
12 visualize it, maybe as a ten-year scale, 10 or 15-year
13 scale, split into about three parts, I feel we're over
14 on the left-hand side some place, in the lower section
15 of that preparedness curve. We have a long way to go.

16 We have much to learn in this
17 business of how to handle spills and emergencies under
18 a great variety of conditions.

19 I'll start with the introduction of
20 the submission.

21 MR. BAYLY: Yes, please, Mr. Pettigrew.

22 A One brief statement before
23 starting to read this. The contingency planning involves,
24 in my terms it involves things like prevention, pre-
25 paredness, coordination, communications, training,
26 research and development identification, threat iden-
27 tification, sensitivity identification.

28 Introduction. During the
29 construction and operation of gas and oil pipelines
30 through the northern Yukon and Mackenzie Valley, there

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 will be large volumes of petrochemicals transported,
2 stored and utilized along the route. Arctic Gas has
3 estimated in their application that about 400,000 tons
4 of fuel and methanol would be used in the construction
5 of their gas line.

6 Fuel will be transported to the
7 site by road, the Mackenzie River barge system, air
8 transport and ocean shipping. Their application goes
9 on to state:

10 "Where fuel must be stored, a separate area
11 will be set aside for storage tanks, and
12 dikes will be placed around the tanks. These
13 areas will be constructed in such a manner as
14 to provide an impermeable barrier.

15 When small volumes of fuel must be stored,
16 liquid fuel storage tanks of the bladder type
17 (up to 1,500 barrel capacity) will be used.
18 For larger fuel storage requirements, steel
19 tanks (up to 5,000 barrels capacity) may be
20 used instead of or in combination with
21 bladder tanks."

22 The U.S. Environmental Protec-
23 tion Agency has estimated that there have been about
24 13,000 spills of oil substances in the United States
25 annually since 1970. Spills have occurred during the
26 building of the Alyeska Pipeline itself. It seems
27 inevitable, therefore, that despite the best intentions
28 and preventive measures taken by a proponent, spills
29 will occur along the Mackenzie line. Concern for how
30 such spills could affect the living environment and social

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 well-being of local residents is, therefore, an important
2 issue.

3 The present gas line applicants
4 and future oil line proponents make frequent reference
5 to oil and chemical spill contingency plans which will be
6 written to handle any spills during the construction and
7 operation of their lines. The gas line applicants
8 outline in some detail the spill preventative measures
9 planned for the facilities during their construction and
10 operation. The applicants clearly recognize the seri-
11 ousness and scale of the problem.

12 The following paper, prepared
13 for the Environmental Emergency Branch of Environment
14 Canada, contains recommendations on information which
15 should be incorporated into a comprehensive contingency
16 plan and site specific action plans for spills of oil and
17 other hazardous materials attributable to pipeline
18 projects along the Mackenzie Valley routes.

19 Definition and objectives of
20 a contingency plan. A contingency plan is a complete
21 organizational package which provides a pattern of co-
22 ordinated and integrated response to a spill of oil or
23 other hazardous materials in order to protect the environ-
24 ment from damaging effects. The objectives of such a
25 plan are:

26 (1) To assure that health and the environment are
27 provided with adequate protection by developing approp-
28 riate preparedness measures to minimize the damage caused
29 by those spills which preventative measures have not been
30 able to avoid.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

- (2) To outline effective systems for detecting, discovering and reporting the existence of a pollution spill.
- (3) To provide for the prompt execution of measures to restrict the further spread of the pollutant.
- (4) To outline the techniques for cleanup and disposal of collected pollutants.
- (5) To provide the protection on actions to pay cleanup costs and damage claims, and to prevent recurrences of similar incidents.

The potential for spill emergencies. Spills of petroleum or other hazardous products could occur from a large number of sources and operations in a pipeline project. These include ocean and river shipping, marine vessel to shore transfer operations, on-shore storage facilities and tank truck transportation. Concentrated methanol solutions could be spilled if there was a pipeline rupture during pipe testing. In addition, other materials such as high temperature lubricants, X-ray photographic chemicals, spent engine oils and fluids, sewage and drinking water treatment chemicals and rust inhibitors could also be released into the environment.

If containment and cleanup of spilled materials was not prompt, toxic effects could result in the damaging of aquatic life, waterfowl and fur-bearing animals downstream of the occurrence. Downstream intakes for industrial or drinking water supplies could also be affected. In winter, spills could migrate undetected under snow and ice cover to areas a long distance removed from their source. Ice and

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
 In Chief

low temperature conditions would make cleanup operations of spilled material difficult, slow and extremely costly.

Small spills would likely only affect the local land area or water body near the source of the material. Because the proposed gas and oil pipelines parallel the Mackenzie Valley for much of their route north of 60, any major spills could enter this water system through tributaries and pollute large areas downstream. This would seem a particular threat during the operation phase of an oil line.

A summary of some areas sensitive to petrochemical spills. The most sensitive area for potential oil spill damage is the Mackenzie Delta. The aquatic habitats found in the delta lakes, streams and Mackenzie River main channels provide extensive areas for a diverse and large fish population. The Mackenzie River estuary provides overwintering areas for several species of anadromous fish and Arctic cisco, least cisco, inconnu and other species used in the main channels for spawning. Broad and humpback whitefish, inconnu and two species of cisco use the channels for overwintering and migration routes to spawning areas. Smaller streams, connecting lakes and larger channels are often spawning areas for grayling, pike, humpback whitefish, and least cisco. Lakes of sufficient depth and size provide habitat for several species. Yaya Lake and Parsons Lake are two important habitats for lake trout and grayling respectively.

The delta is an extremely

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 important area for domestic and commercial fisheries.
2 The main channels and the delta coast are the locations
3 of extensive fishing activities. Important fishing camps
4 are centred around Aklavik in the Western Delta; Kugmallit
5 Bay and the East Channel are the areas of most eastern
6 fishing activity. Whitefish Station and Kittigazuit are
7 the main fishing camps in Shallow Bay. An important
8 commercial fishery is centred around the East Channel-
9 Holmes Creek area, and most of the catch is sold in
10 Inuvik. A large oil spill in the delta or near the
11 mouths of the Peel or Arctic Red River could cause serious
12 damage to domestic and commercial fisheries in the area.

13 The Mackenzie estuary is
14 also an important area for calving whales. Shallow Bay
15 and Kugmallit Bay are nursery and calving areas for
16 beluga whales during the summer months, and provide
17 good hunting for local residents. An oil spill could
18 disturb the calving females and their young.

19 The Beaufort Sea coast estuaries
20 and lagoons are important overwintering, feeding, and
21 possible spawning areas for char, grayling, cisco,
22 whitefish, inconnu and other species. Domestic fishing
23 is carried out at Shingle Point, Komakuk Beach and
24 Herschel.

25 Important fish resources and
26 fisheries are also present on the Yukon North Slope and
27 interior routes. The Old Crow and Porcupine drainages
28 have many spawning, overwintering and domestic fishery
29 areas on them downstream of the present pipeline
30 crossings.

Oil spills along the Beaufort

Pellingew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Sea coast and in the Mackenzie Delta could result in
2 serious damage to large concentrations of waterfowl
3 which use these areas during the summer months. Whistling
4 swans, snow geese and other types of waterfowl and
5 shore birds account for almost three-quarters of the
6 52 species of birds using the delta.

7 The Mackenzie Delta is one of the
8 major waterfowl breeding areas in North America. The
9 most important waterfowl nesting or feeding areas are
10 located in the western outer delta, with the largest
11 concentrations being found along the coast of Mackenzie
12 Bay from Mallik Bay to Shingle Point. The East Channel
13 is of moderate to high importance to waterfowl, and the
14 north-eastern coast of Richards Island is of moderate
15 importance to swans.

16 The Beaufort Sea coastal plain
17 is another important area for resting and feeding
18 activities. Waterfowl species concentrate around river
19 delta areas, nesting near lakes of the coastal plain.
20 The Mackenzie River Valley is used as a flyway by migrat-
21 ing birds during the spring and fall. During these
22 migrations, stops may be made along the Mackenzie River
23 for feeding or resting, but these stops are short-term
24 only. Oil spills on the Mackenzie during these migrations
25 could prove harmful should the birds come in contact
26 with the spill.

27 The delta is also valuable
28 habitat for muskrats, beaver, otter, mink and other
29 fur-bearing species. Muskrats are by far the most
30

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 economically important and support an extensive
2 trapping industry. Muskrats are plentiful from the base
3 of the Tuk Peninsula to the Thunder River. An oil spill
4 in the delta could have serious impacts upon the
5 muskrat population and disrupt the local trapping
6 industry. The importance of the Mackenzie delta to
7 fish, waterfowl and mammals cannot be over-emphasized.
8 Oil spills in the delta could seriously hurt the
9 productivity of the fish and the wildlife resources
10 and directly affect the local residents who depend on
11 these resources for their food and livelihood.

12 Components of a Mackenzie
13 Valley Pipeline Spill Contingency Plan. Contractors
14 and operators are expected by government to have an
15 appropriate emergency organization to deal with any
16 spills of oil or chemicals which might occur during the
17 construction or operation of a pipeline through the Mac-
18 kenzie Valley. Such an organization must have a work-
19 able written contingency plan which spells out how a
20 spill emergency would be handled in the vicinity of the
21 pipeline right-of-way, and in areas downstream which
22 could be affected.

23 The contingency plan for a
24 Mackenzie Valley Pipeline should be concise and uncluttered
25 with extraneous detail. The plan should include the
26 following:

27 (1) Purpose: This should explain the operator's prevention
28 and contingency goals, and how it is intended that they
29 be met.

30 (2) Scope: The plan should include spill emergency

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 schemes on everything within the right-of-way and the
2 support facilities. It should also take into account
3 accidents or environmental extremes which could originate
4 outside or spread beyond the right-of-way boundaries,
5 such as oil or chemical spills from other operations
6 in the area, flooding, landslides, vandalism.

7 (3) Corporate policy and responsibilities: A brief
8 point form outline of the senior management decisions on
9 policy matters, legal requirements and moral responsi-
10 bilities should be covered in this section. The contin-
11 gency plan should go into some detail on these points.
12 Some policy questions which must be decided upon are
13 the following:

14 (a) Is containment and cleanup of spills to be done
15 in-house with proponent staff, or using outside contrac-
16 tors?

17 (b) What staff position levels have the predesignated
18 authority to call out spill emergency containment and
19 cleanup resources?

20 (c) What staff position levels have the authority to
21 commit the proponent financially to cleanup contractors,
22 and to what amount? One point of clarification there,
23 authority to commit resources needs to be identified
24 and those in positions need to be pre-designated.

25 (d) What are the relationships to be with other
26 petroleum industry and developm ent operators regarding
27 spill prevention and mitigation in the area? Here again
28 these arrangements need to be thought out in advance,
29 pre-arranged agreements.

30 (e) What will be the distribution of the contingency

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 plan and the site-specific action plans in support of
2 it both within and outside the proponent organization?
3 (f) How are media and public relations enquiries to be
4 handled during spills along the pipeline?

5 Legislative requirements for
6 the proponent to satisfy, other than those which will be
7 outlined in the permit documentation to construct the
8 line include the following:

9 A. Federal Acts.

10 (a) Department of Indian Affairs and Northern
11 Development administered Acts and regulations such
12 as the Northern Inland Waters Act, the Arctic Waters
13 Pollution Prevention Act, the Arctic Waters Pollution
14 Prevention Regulations, Territorial Lands Act, the
15 Oil & Gas Production & Conservation Act.

16 One point, certain provincial
17 Acts will apply to pipeline matters and to waters
18 south of 60 degrees.

19 (b) The Department of the Environment administered
20 Acts and Regulations. These include the Fisheries
21 Act, Migratory Birds Convention Act, Canada Water
22 Act, Clean Air Act, Environmental Contaminants Act,
23 the Ocean Dumping Act.

24 (c) The Ministry of Transport administered Acts
25 and Regulations. These are or include the Arctic
26 Shipping Pollution Prevention Regulations, the Canada
27 Shipping Act, Oil Pollution Prevention Regulations.

28 B. Territorial Ordinances:

29 These include the Environmental Protection
30 Ordinance, Gas Handling Ordinance, Public Health

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In C hief

Ordinance. Pertinent parts of this legislation should be summarized in the contingency plan and detailed in an appendix.

The next, component parts of a contingency plan. We have now named three. This one is No. 4, planning and response elements. This part of the plan should explain how the contingency plan is organized and how it fits into other plans in the area and how the emergency response is co-ordinated.

I would add to that that this underlines the need for an integrated contingency plan. Now, under that heading of planning and response elements, there are four recommendations for a Mackenzie Valley Pipeline.

(1) That on-scene commanders be pre-designated for spill accidents within the scope of the plan.

(2) Alternate on-scene commanders be pre-designated to act in the absence of the regular on-scene commander.

(3) Spill response team members and their alternates be pre-designated and each member be assigned to be responsible for the management of one of the following functions: Logistics covering transportation, communications, accommodation; equipment, which might cover cleanup machinery or equipment and materials; manpower, which would cover employees, proponent employees, contracted workers, volunteers; another item is public and press information; environmental matters; legal advice and office services. Any necessary technical, environmental or managerial advisors should be under the direction of the O.S.C. but could work closely with any one

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 of the spill response team members.

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Excuse me.

3 A Yes.

4 Q The on-scene commander,
5 I don't quite follow this, is he -- does he head the
6 spill response team? And the other members of the
7 team have ^{their} designated responsibilities in each of these
8 areas.

9 A That's right.

10 Q All right. Sorry, if it's
11 obvious but I wanted to make sure I understood.

12 A The fourth recommendation
13 under this heading is that spill response centres be
14 pre-designated as the operations co-ordinating centre
15 to implement the action plans for spill emergencies along
16 the line.

17 An example, there could be Inuvik
18 as a spill response centre for a significant or major
19 spill in the Beaufort Sea.

20 The fifth component of a contin-
21 gency plan for the Mackenzie Valley Pipeline is under
22 the heading of response operations. Actions taken to
23 respond to a spill incident can be divided into five
24 overlapping phases.

25 (1) Is discovery and notification.

26 (2) Is containment and counter-measures.

27 (3) Is cleanup and disposal.

28 (4) Is restoration and payment of damages.

29 (5) Is Cleanup costs and fines.

30 Now under the first one, spill

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 discovery and notification. These two steps are very
2 important to the action plan. If spills or leaks are not
3 quickly discovered and a good notification system for
4 reporting, the first few critical hours of a spill inci-
5 dent would be lost to the containment process. Inci-
6 dentally, we believe that the first hour or two are
7 extremely critical in reducing cost and involvement in
8 a spill cleanup. This could result in unnecessary
9 environmental damage, and in this case cost of counter-
10 measure response would rise sharply. Spill discovery
11 could be the result of casual observation or by routine
12 facility checks by the proponent staff and contractors.
13 Notification includes internal proponent organization
14 reporting and external government agency alerting.
15 That affects public and media.

16 Now under this heading of
17 discovery and notification there are a few recommendations
18 specific to the Mackenzie Valley Pipeline. It is
19 recommended first that personnel manning telephone, and
20 this has to do with the proponent or industry or company,
21 the personnel manning telephone and radio telephone
22 numbers normally available for service to the public,
23 be informed of who to notify in the pipeline corporation if
24 a leak or spill is spotted by a member of the public and
25 reported to these members.

26 Second, that a spill emergency
27 phone number be circulated to government agencies concern-
28 ed with spills of hazardous substances from a Mackenzie
29 line into the environment. For instance, Ministry of
30 Transport, Department of the Environment, Department of

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In C hief

1 Indian and Northern Affairs, to enable them to contact
2 the proponent through suitable channels if they receive
3 reports of or observe spills from the pipeline.

4 Third recommendation, a
5 documented system of regularly scheduled inspections
6 of pipeline facilities be carried out by the proponent
7 staff to check for actual and potential fuel leaks or
8 spills at key areas along the pipeline and around
9 associated facility property. Systems of automatic
10 alarms for warning of tank farm leaks or oil transfer
11 operation spills should be considered.

12 Fourth recommendation, a spill
13 notification and information system be instituted in
14 the proponent organization to inform appropriate senior
15 staff and concerned government agencies and potentially
16 affected or involved Mackenzie Valley or Yukon North
17 Slope industries and municipalities of a spill and to
18 keep them informed on containment and cleanup activities.
19 The severity of the spill will generally determine
20 the notification pattern and the extent.

21 Fifth recommendation, notifi-
22 cation be done through a specific pre-designated pro-
23 ponent dispatcher, or his alternate, so that the personnel
24 directly concerned with a spill problem along the pipeline
25 can proceed with the job of controlling the spill.

26 Under the heading of
27 spill containment and counter-measures, this is the
28 second phase under "response". This phase includes the
29 deployment as directed by the on-scene commander and
30 with assistance and advice from the spill response team,

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
 In Chief

it includes the deployment of booms, absorbants, vacuum pumps, equipment necessary to contain or neutralize the spilled substance or protect property, for instance water intakes, small craft harbours, bird sanctuaries and so on, protect things like that from pollution. It would also include any measures necessary to stop more pollutants from spilling.

Once again, there are a few recommendations specifically for the Mackenzie Valley Pipeline.

First recommendation under the heading of "containment and counter-measures", that the proponent be a member of the National Emergency Equipment Locator System, which is termed NEELS for short, this is a computerized inventory bank of cleanup equipment available in Canada.

Second recommendation, that trained personnel be available at key installations along the route to handle containment and cleanup equipment. Periodic mock exercises should be held to keep cleanup personnel up-to-date and the equipment in working order.

Third recommendation, containment and cleanup equipment be stockpiled at appropriate intervals along the pipeline right-of-way and at high spill risk installations.

Fourth, that every effort be made to contain any spill on land before it gets to any water body. Because of the steep terrain and the proximity of freshwater systems or the sea in many areas, this could be difficult. Consideration should be given

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 to fabricating and installing spill barriers in surface
2 runoff ditches and depressions likely to catch oil or
3 chemicals around some facilities.

4 Fifth recommendation, that a
5 spill be removed quickly from drainage ditches or a
6 tank farm containment dyke area by using pumping systems
7 with skimming heads, commercial or natural absorbants,
8 physical removal and disposal under permit of contaminated
9 ground or burning under permit. If bunker oil is spilled,
10 pumping or absorbing may be impractical because of its
11 high viscosity. In this case, a continuous absorbant
12 belt, conveyor system, special absorbant application or
13 even rake and shovel operation could be necessary.

14 Still under this heading of
15 "containment and counter-measures", I break it down into
16 two sub-headings:

17 (1) In the event that containment action fails on land
18 and a stream or river channel operation is necessary,
19 and to continue with the recommendations, under that
20 sub-heading, that booms be deployed at critical points
21 along appropriate shoreline such as across the entrance
22 to important waterfowl and fish resource areas and key
23 water intakes, small boat wharves, bird staging sites,
24 fisheries areas.

25 Next recommendation, that booms
26 be deployed in river channels at pre-determined sites or
27 prepared access points to contain the spill where the
28 current is not too strong, or to deflect the oil into
29 pre-designated collecting areas along the shoreline if
30 the river flow velocity is high.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Next recommendation, that booms
2 be deployed anywhere in larger bodies where oil can be
3 trapped or corralled. Skimmers may be used to
4 collect oil which has been diverted toward them by means
5 of booms.

6 Now under the sub-heading,
7 (2) In the event that containment action fails on land
8 and in a river channel, a Beaufort Sea operation becomes
9 necessary, this is still under the heading of "containment
10 and counter-measures", and further recommendations.

11 No. 9, that booms be deployed
12 along the Mackenzie River in the delta or in the Beaufort
13 Sea to protect key wildlife, fisheries and harbour areas.

14 No. 10, booms, skimmers and
15 absorbants be deployed, weather permitting, in areas
16 where floating oil can be contained or absorbed for pickup.

17 No. 11, that any special methods
18 for cleaning up oil from ice infested waters and oil under
19 ice which might result from experiments being carried
20 out in the Beaufort Sea program, be incorporated into the
21 Mackenzie Valley Pipeline action plan when these are
22 developed by the company concerned.

23 No. 12, that dispersing materials
24 be used in Mackenzie Valley-Beaufort Sea pollution con-
25 tainment or cleanup operations, only within the restric-
26 tive guidelines published by Environment Canada for the
27 controlled use of these materials.

28 No. 13, that the proponent
29 formalize co-operative spill working arrangements with
30 the other petroleum and industrial operators along the

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 pipeline route. Equipment purchases by these organizations
2 could then be further co-ordinated and cleanup staffs
3 augmented for maximum efficiency.

4 Under the broad heading of
5 "response operations" we come to the third phase of
6 counter-measures entitled:

7 "Cleanup and disposal".

8 This work involves the actions
9 necessary to remove the pollutant from the water and
10 related on-shore areas using absorbants, skimmers,
11 earth-moving machinery, etc., to physically pick up
12 oiled beach materials. It should also include the
13 collection of oiled birds and establishment of bird
14 rehabilitation centres. Controlled disposal of pollutants
15 and contaminated materials in approved locations where
16 they will not re-contaminate the environment is an
17 important activity in this phase. In an area having
18 the fluctuating river and marine water level environments
19 along the pipeline routes, this work must be done around
20 the clock to prevent high water levels or heavy precipi-
21 tation moving oil from polluted beaches and ditches
22 to areas which were not previously contaminated. In
23 winter, the oil should be picked up quickly to prevent
24 migration under the snow and ice. If it gets under
25 ice, efforts should be made to locate and recover oil
26 before spring breakup.

27 Once again, for a Mackenzie
28 Valley Pipeline, a few recommendations:

29 1. Drainage ditches and shoreline cleanup be done as
30 quickly as possible with highest priority on areas

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 environmentally sensitive. The proponent is expected to
2 have maps showing areas highly sensitive to spills in
3 areas which could be affected by oil and chemical
4 contamination.

5 2. For cobble and gravel beaches, natural materials
6 or commercial absorbants be spread over the area to
7 absorb the oil, and then be recovered by hand-raking.

8 3. Liquid oil-water mixtures, spent absorbants,
9 contaminated driftwood and beach materials, be stored
10 temporarily in 45-gallon drums or plastic lined pits,
11 dug above the high water mark.

12 4. Permanent disposal methods be worked out using
13 oil reclaiming facilities of the proponent or at pre-
14 selected government -approved permanent land disposal
15 sites.

16 Phase 4. Restoration. This
17 phase covers soil or shoreline material restoration,
18 cleaning of private property such as piers and boats,
19 and restoring to the satisfaction of the appropriate
20 government agency as much as necessary of the living
21 environment such as attempting oiled birds rehabilitation
22 or restocking aquatic resources.

23 Under "Restoration" again, a
24 few recommendations in regard to a Mackenzie Valley
25 Pipeline.

26 1. Soil restoration be done with advice from recognized
27 contaminated soil restoration experts who could set up a
28 program specific to the contamination problem at the site.

29 2. Cleaning of docks, boats and other private property
30 be done on a high priority basis, or alternatively, on

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 the spot cash settlements be made to enable the affected
2 parties to have their property cleaned by a private
3 company.

4 3. Recreational beach restoration be done according
5 to agreements reached with local Territorial and municipal
6 officials.

7 4. Bird and aquatic fauna rehabilitation be done
8 according to agreements with Environment Canada officials.
9 Canadian Wildlife Service could provide advice on bird
10 rehabilitation operations.

11 Phase 5, which is payment of
12 damages, cleanup costs and finds. This phase generally
13 takes place last but the information and the actions
14 required in it must be recorded in detail from the
15 start of the spill incident. A few recommendations
16 under this last phase, that's Phase 5 of payment of
17 damages, etc.:

18 1. In order that their work not be interrupted, opera-
19 tional personnel involved in the spill cleanup take
20 part as little as possible in any legal investigations
21 during the incident.

22 2. All proponent supervisory personnel involved in the
23 incident keep thorough detailed notes of their activities
24 and decisions during the incident.

25 3. Proponent legal staff be assigned to work with
26 government agencies, cleanup contractors and small claims
27 from boat owners and fishermen during and after the
28 incident.

29 4. Small straightforward claims from fishermen,
30 private citizens and small businesses be settled quickly.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

Paragraph 6, under the heading of
"Overall Co-Ordinating Instructions."

This section should contain
all the information required by operational personnel to
really understand how an incident would be managed.
Recommendations for a Mackenzie Valley Pipeline under
that last heading of "Overall Co-Ordination Instructions".

1. Electronic portable communications along -- among
the operational personnel be of excellent standard. Next
to effective action planning, good communications for
alerting personnel and for hour by hour coordination
among cleanup forces is the most important operation
parameter.

2. Spill cleanup progress briefings take place daily
at an operation centre during the period that action is
required on an emergency basis. All cleanup staff
supervisors, spill response team members, advisors,
and so on should be present.

3. That detailed minutes of these meetings be kept.

4. Agreed to courses of action for the spill response
team members and their work parties should be summarized
in point form and circulated the following morning, in
order that no misunderstandings develop.

5. Senior management, press and government agency
liaison personnel should attend the daily briefings.

6. Press conferences be held once per day with the
on-scene commander and any necessary technical advisers
in attendance. The public relations member of the
spill response team be available to the press at any time
and arrange for tours, telephone facilities.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

7. Appendices, non-operational sections of the action plan should contain information on word definitions, who has copies of the plan, the plan up-dating procedures, communications, legal authorities, financial procedures, and a list of non-proponent plans for the pipeline route areas.

For a Mackenzie Valley Pipeline it is recommended:

1. That the contingency plan be distributed to all appropriate proponent headquarters and field staff, and government agencies operationally concerned or having jurisdiction along the route.

2. The plan be up-dated and operationally tested by field exercises at least once per year on a scheduled and documented basis. Plans of these exercises should be submitted to the relevant government agency for review one month in advance.

3. Portable radio and telephone communications be reviewed and use procedures outlined.

4. Legislation applicable to a spill incident along the route be summarized.

5. The non-proponent action plans along the route be listed.

F. of the submission entitled:

"The Roles of Government Agencies".

The Department of Indian & Northern Affairs, through the Territorial Government, assumes operational leadership and management of spills on behalf of the Federal Government in the Northwest Territories for all land environmental emergencies

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 occurring north of the 60th Parallel. The Northwest
2 Territories Government has formed an Emergency Control
3 Committee to carry out this co-ordination. Serving on
4 this committee are the following Federal Government
5 Departments:

6 National Defence

7 Ministry of Transport

8 Indian & Northern Affairs

9 Department of Environment

10 Royal Canadian Mounted Police

11 The Department of Manpower

12 Department of Public Works

13 Canadian National Telecommunications

14 Northern Canada Power Commission

15 Northern Transportation Company Limited.

16 In the Yukon there are
17 differences, and there the Department of Indian &
18 Northern Affairs assumes operational leadership and
19 management of spills on behalf of the Federal Government
20 for all spills which occur as a result of land use
21 operations under a Territorial Land Act permit, and
22 operations that have a water use licence or water use
23 authorization under the Northern Inland Waters Act.
24 Environment Canada assumes operational leadership and
25 management of spills resulting from operations not under
26 such a licence or permit. An ad hoc Committee carries
27 out this co-ordination of spill response. Membership on
28 this committee includes:

29 Environment Canada

30 Environmental Protection Service, acting as chairman

19116

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Department of Indian & Northern Affairs

2 Yukon Territorial Government

3 Both the Game Branch and Highways and Public Works.

4 For spills originating from
5 offshore mineral exploration or mineral extraction
6 sources such as oil, Department of Indian & Northern
7 Affairs through M.O.T. will lead the response for affected
8 areas in the Beaufort Sea. When the spill originates
9 from a ship at sea or on a navigable waterway, the
10 Ministry of Transport will assume the lead role.

11 Environment Canada will provide guidance to the depart-
12 ments mentioned above, and assist in meeting a federal
13 response. This might include communications networks,
14 expert advice on fish, wildlife, weather and vegetation,
15 technological information on spill counter-measures,
16 properties of hazardous substances and equipment sources
17 in other parts of Canada.

18 To me that paragraph underlines
19 the advisory capacity that we believe we have. To continue,

20 When the operator responsible
21 for the discharge of oil or other hazardous materials
22 fails to act promptly, does not take appropriate actions
23 to contain, cleanup and dispose of pollutants, or^{if}/the
24 discharger is unknown, direct Territorial-Federal response
25 actions shall be instituted. This same procedure will
26 be effected in cases where the operator is unable to
27 cope with the situation.

28 The national contingency plans
29 written by the Ministry of Transport and the Department
30 of the Environment for environmental emergencies describes

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 the federal organizagional arrangements for emergency
2 responses. A description of the more important Territorial
3 and Federal agencies which should fit into an operator's
4 plan are the following:

5 1. The Territorial Emergency Control Committee ,
6 Yellowknife. This is a senior management body designed
7 to assume the lead role on behalf of the Department of
8 Indian & Northern Affairs in organizing and implementing
9 a response to a major war or peacetime emergency includ-
10 ing oil and chemical spills in the Northwest Territories.

11 2. The Yukon Disaster Committee, Whitehorse, is a
12 senior management body designed to assume the lead role
13 in organizing and implementing a response to a major war
14 or peacetime emergency including oil and chemical spills
15 in the Yukon Territory.

16 3. The on-scene coordinator, coordinates and directs
17 government pollution control efforts at the scene of a
18 pollution incident.

19 4. Pollution prevention officers have been located
20 at specific centres to action reports of spills into
21 Arctic waters, on the mainland or islands of the
22 Canadian Arctic which may enter Arctic waters.

23 5. The local offices of the Environmental Protection
24 Service, Environment Canada, located at Yellowknife
25 and at Whitehorse are to provide technical advice and
26 guidance to federal and territorial bodies on emergency
27 matters.

28 6. The Federal Inter-departmental Regional Environmental
29 Emergency Team, known as the REET is established on
30 a regional basis. The Pacific team, located at

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Vancouver, and the Northwest team, located at Edmonton,
2 would serve as a resource element to the appropriate
3 committee in case of a major incident.

4 7. The national environmental emergency team is an
5 inter-departmental consultative mechanism at the federal
6 headquarters level.

7 Any funds spent by the
8 Federal Government for spill mitigation would be recovered
9 from the polluter after an incident.

10 Conclusions:

11 1. Construction and operation of gas or oil pipeline --
12 of a gas or of an oil pipeline through the Mackenzie
13 Valley would considerably increase the risk of petro-
14 chemical spills in the area.

15 2. There are many aquatic and wildlife resources in
16 the Beaufort Sea and Mackenzie Valley which could be
17 seriously harmed by spills of oil or chemicals.

18 3. The impact of spills in the area could reduce the
19 value of these living resources for subsistence and
20 recreational uses.

21 4. Effective spill contingency planning would
22 minimize the incidence of spills and reduce the magnitude
23 of their impact on the living environment.

24 5. A highly co-operative effort on the part of industry
25 and government is recommended as the best means of
26 achieving effective spill mitigation measures for a
27 pipeline project.

28 MR. BAYLY: Thank you, Mr.
29 Pettigrew. Mr. Commissioner, I wonder if this might
30 be an appropriate time to break for coffee?

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, certainly.

(PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED AT 3:15 P.M.)

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25
- 26
- 27
- 28
- 29
- 30

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 (PROCEEDINGS RESUMED AT 3:30 P.M.)

2 THE COMMISSIONER: Well, let's
3 come to order.

4 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Snow is to repeat
5 some remarks of Groucho Marx.

6 WITNESS SNOW: I will start out
7 by outlining my involvement with the Mackenzie Valley
8 Pipeline project. The Freshwater Institute of the
9 Fisheries Research Board of Canada initiated a study
10 of the impact of gas and oil pipelines, highway construc-
11 tion and operation on the freshwater ecosystems of the
12 Mackenzie and Porcupine River watersheds in 1971, and
13 this was carried out under the auspices of the Environ-
14 mental Social Program, Northern Pipelines. Our head-
15 quarters was in Winnipeg with a field logistics base
16 in Yellowknife, and field camps originally located in
17 Fort Simpson, Norman Wells, Arctic Red River, Inuvik and
18 Old Crow in the Yukon. Budgetary restrictions necessi-
19 tated closing down the Norman Wells and Arctic Red River
20 camps in '72. The remaining camps were operable until
21 the end of the program in '74.

22 My affiliation with the project
23 began in 1971, at which time I was a research scientist
24 in charge of the Inuvik field camp. In 1973 the Old
25 Crow field camp became included in this operation and
26 therefore came under my jurisdiction. Until the end of
27 the project I was involved in carrying^{out} the oil spill
28 impact evaluation side of our work, gathering baseline
29 ecological data for the delta and the nearshore Beaufort
30 Sea area, and writing reports and papers on these and

1 related subjects.

Following this general survey,
an experimental approach was adopted to study the specific effects of two major types of disturbance to aquatic habitat occasioned by pipeline development. These were the effects of increases in suspended sediment from erosion and the effects of oil in water.

The suspended sediment studies were carried out primarily in the Fort Simpson area, whilst the oil spill studies were primarily undertaken in the Inuvik region. Data obtained from the whole area were, however, used to support the experimental studies with sampling stations located throughout the Mackenzie and Porcupine systems.

28 The objectives of our oil spill
29 studies, briefly these were:

- 30 (1) To study changes in the structure of benthic

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 communities in selected lakes and rivers of the
2 Mackenzie and Porcupine watersheds in response to the
3 addition of northern crude oil. The one that we
4 selected was Norman Wells crude for its ease of attain-
5 ment.

6 (2) To study changes in water quality associated with
7 the addition of Norman Wells crude to the selected
8 aquatic ecosystems in the study areas.

9 (3) To study the fate of crude oil following experimen-
10 tal spills on the Mackenzie Delta lakes.

11 (4) To study the effect of Norman Wells crude on the
12 colonization of river bed substrates by benthic
13 organisms, and

14 (5) To make recommendations concerning contingency
15 plans for spills of oil and other hazardous substances.

16 Some of the problems of oil
17 pollution, and I'd like to make some general points
18 concerning spills.

19 (1) First of all, the term "oil spill" is a generic
20 term which covers all types of petrochemicals that may
21 be spilled from refined gasolines and kerosenes through
22 to crude oil. It's the latter type of spill that conjures
23 up most people's images of a disaster, a great black or
24 brown mess contaminating miles of rocky coastline and
25 sandy beaches and causing death to thousands of sea
26 birds. The visual impact of such an event is enormous.
27 It gives rise to much the same emotion as would be
28 expressed if one first visits a forest fire immediately
29 after the fire has swept through it, the common response
30 being, "My God, how will it ever recover?"

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Yet we know from experience that
2 forest fire burn areas do in fact recover, within varying
3 lengths of time according to their latitude and are in
4 fact an ^{inherent} part of natural change of such ecosystems. Much
5 the same occurs in the recovery of an area that's been
6 contaminated by an oil spill. There are many incidents
7 of major oil spills that have occurred in more temperate
8 latitudes such as the "Torrey Canyon" incident off the
9 coast of the U.K., the "Arrow" in Chedabucto Bay off
10 the eastern seaboard of this country, and the Santa
11 Barbara oil spill off the west coast of the U.S.A.
12 All of these disasters had their impact on the marine
13 environment but it was not an irreversible one. In all
14 three cases mentioned there has, in fact, been a recovery
15 of many of the affected segments of biota.

16 I do not wish to imply by
17 these remarks that oil spills do not cause any damage or
18 their effects may not be long-lasting. I do hold out the
19 candle of hope that there will be recovery, and by
20 "recovery" I do not necessarily mean a reversion to the
21 former state before the oil spill. Ecosystems have
22 ability and resilience at any latitude and providing
23 certain limits are not exceeded, they will usually
24 recover to restore a new balance of nature. Whether this
25 new balance is acceptable to man or other components of
26 the ecosystem is not always readily accessible.

27 Another feature of the visual
28 impact of an oil spill is the conspicuous or highly
29 visible components of ecosystems such as sea birds which
30 are readily seen to be adversely affected by oil. Birds

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 are vertebrates, that is animals with backbones, and
2 vertebrates only make up 5% of the animal kingdom. The
3 other 95 is composed of animals without backbone, which
4 are generally much smaller, occur in far denser popula-
5 tions, many of which are microscopic. But such microscop-
6 ic components of ecosystems, both animals and plants,
7 which form the basis of the food chains in the Beaufort
8 Sea or the delta/^{aquatic}ecosystems as anywhere else. Such com-
9 ponents may be just as adversely affected by the presence
10 of oil as sea birds, even though this is not very often
11 readily apparent.

12 The implications of such an
13 effect in terms of the total integrity and stability of
14 an ecosystem are far-reaching. This has special
15 significance in terms of the Mackenzie Delta ecosystem
16 because of the position that this area occupies in
17 Northern Canada. It's very different from most other
18 areas of the world, which have been subjected to oil
19 spills. Most of the classic Maritime oil spill disas-
20 ters have contaminated large areas of predominantly
21 rocky coastlines. These coastlines are usually associa-
22 ted with a high degree of wave and surf action. Rocks
23 that become contaminated with crude oil have thus
24 usually subjected to strong tidal and wave action which
25 would tend to cleanse them. They are also exposed to
26 the natural cleansing activity brought about by indigenous
27 organisms such as snails and limpets. These animals
28 scrape the oil ~~from~~ the rocks and thereby assist in the
29 cleanup process in temperate latitudes; but they do not
30 occur along the coastline of the Beaufort Sea.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 To date there have been no
2 major oil spill disasters that have contaminated large
3 areas of relatively quiet water with extensive mud
4 flat zones. Such a situation clearly exists in the
5 Mackenzie Delta and the nearshore Beaufort Sea area,
6 including the Tuk Peninsula. Here we have an area where
7 there are deltaic processes going on, creating large
8 areas of sedimentary habitat.

9 These sediments are composed of
10 basically very fine particles, silts, which are very
11 readily admixed with oil. In addition to this, the self-
12 cleaning ability of the area is severely restricted
13 compared to a rocky shore. The mean tidal amplitude
14 is approximately one or two feet. Wave and surf action
15 is also far less than that normally experienced on more
16 temperate rocky shores.

17 As a general rule of thumb, the
18 smaller the particle size of sediment, the greater is
19 its potential for contamination with oil. There are
20 several documented cases where sandy beaches have been
21 contaminated with oil from a spill, often to a depth of
22 several feet.

23 As I stated earlier, there has
24 been no major oil spill in a tidal mud flat area which
25 by and large supports a more abundant and diverse
26 community in which to compare effects. However, the
27 potential for the absorption and holding of oil following
28 a spill is potentially far greater in such an area than
29 it is in a sandy area, and obviously more so than for a
30 rocky area. It would therefore seem that the Mackenzie

1 Delta and its immediately adjacent offshore area
2 represents a set of conditions which would tend to maximize
3 the adverse effects of an oil spill were one to occur
4 there.

5 The present level of hydrocarbon
6 exploration activity in that area certainly increases the
7 probability of an oil spill event. The delta is the
8 focal point of gas and oil development activity in the
9 Western Arctic. The main concern which therefore faces
10 this productive area is one of cumulative impact. Not
11 only do we have the possibility of major crossings of
12 delta channels by the trunk gas line itself, but there
13 is also the additional consideration of the gas process-
14 ing plant, offshore drilling activity, and in the future
15 an oil transportation system, probably a pipeline.

16 Each of these activities has
17 associated with it the potential for spills of fuels of various
18 kinds, and crude oil itself. These range from the minor
19 incidents involving only a few gallons or a few hundred
20 gallons of diesel^{or} aviation fuel, up to the many thousands
21 of barrels of crude oil which would occur in the event
22 of an uncontrolled well head blowout during offshore
23 drilling or an oil pipeline rupture.

24 The time of year at which any
25 spill event occurred in the delta is of prime importance
26 in determining the magnitude of the impact. No time of
27 the year would be a good time to have an oil or fuel
28 spill in the delta. The time at which one could best
29 be dealt with would be the winter if the spill occurred
30 on the surface of the ice. If it occurred under the ice,

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 then not only would it be very difficult to map the
2 course of the spilled material, but the recovery of
3 fuel would also be difficult to achieve. The worst time
4 would probably be just following spring breakup when
5 the Mackenzie is at peak discharge, most of the delta
6 is flooded, and there is still some ice about.

7 Ice can have useful and
8 impeding effects in terms of oil spill cleanup and
9 containment. In some cases ice can act as a very
10 efficient natural barrier in assisting ponding the oil,
11 thereby facilitating its subsequent removal. If the
12 ice is on themove, however, this would hamper the
13 deployment of cleanup equipment and procedures.

14 Following spring breakup a
15 spill of any kind of petrochemical would be distributed
16 rapidly by the channels of the delta which would act
17 as arteries allowing maximum dispersal within the shortest
18 possible time. It would also affect most of the delta
19 lakes in its path which are normally flooded at that
20 time. Later on in the season many of these same lakes
21 would be immune from contamination by oil in this way.

22 A few comments on the effects
23 of oil. Having outlined the broad area of concern,
24 the susceptibility of the delta area to petrochemical
25 pollution, I would like to briefly summarize the
26 salient features of the effects of crude oil and
27 petroleum products. Sea birds are probably the most
28 obvious casualties of oil spills. Mortality usually
29 results from the destruction of the waterproofing and
30 heat insulation ability of their feathers, and also from

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 oil ingestion during preening. The delta and offshore
2 areas are utilized extensively by many bird species, as
3 I'm sure you've heard before now.

4 Apart from the direct mortality
5 from oil spills is the additional long-term component
6 which results from the loss of nestlings, the nest sites
7 themselves being rendered useless for future generations
8 by oil contamination, and the threat of degrading feeding,
9 brood-rearing and staging areas.

10 Within the aquatic environment
11 the more mobile organisms, such as fish, can and often
12 do avoid contamination by oil. This may not always be
13 possible in shallow areas in small lakes, or in coastal
14 embayments. The delta has many examples of these three
15 types of habitat, and the special significance here is
16 the fact that the latter two habitats -- that is small
17 lakes and coastal embayments -- are known to be feeding
18 and nursery areas for juveniles and fry of several fish
19 species. Fry in particular are ^{especially} susceptible to oil
20 contamination, since they usually inhabit the upper water
21 layers. The toxic aromatic lighter fractions of
22 fish -- the lighter fractions of fresh crude oil can
23 kill fish directly. Other longer-term effects include
24 the formation of gill lesions and certain forms of skin
25 cancer.

26 Beluga whales are annual
27 visitors to the delta area, an important resource for
28 the local people. These mammals also have the potential
29 to avoid oil contamination, but they utilize the ice
30 leads extensively in early spring. Such leads would be

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 natural ponding areas for any oil pollutant. Although
2 nothing is known of the effect of -- specifically of
3 the effect of petroleum products on beluga, enzymology
4 studies currently being carried out by Dr. J. Geraci
5 at the University of Guelph indicate that their skin
6 may be the major osmoregulatory organ of these animals
7 and is obviously highly susceptible to any adverse
8 effects resulting from contact with oil.

9 Perhaps I should explain,
10 osmoregulatory organ is salt and water balance,
11 a role that is usually carried out by the kidneys.

12 THE COMMISSIONER: Salt and water
13 balance, did you say?

14 A Yes. But there is evidence
15 that in the beluga the skin at least takes over part,
16 if not all of this function.

17 Aquatic invertebrates show a
18 spectrum of sensitivity to oil. Some species suffer
19 massive mortality, for example, freshwater zooplanktonic
20 crustaceans and marine anthropods, a shrimp-like crusta-
21 cean, whilst others are relatively tolerant; zooplankton
22 in delta lakes and anthropods in the nearshore Beaufort
23 Sea are very abundant, and are extensively utilized
24 as food by fish and marine mammals in the area.

25 My own work concerning the
26 effects of relatively small quantities of crude oil in
27 the Mackenzie Delta lakes indicated a subtle re-arrange-
28 ment of benthic communities and produced an ecological
29 shift. Certain organisms were completely wiped out to
30 be replaced by others which were relatively rare prior

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 to the spill. After three years, a new balance has
2 been established but the faunal assemblages are quite
3 different from those occurring before the spill.

4 We determined that the most
5 toxic fractions of two types of oil, of the crude oil
6 that we used, disappeared very soon after the spill, and
7 approximately half the oil evaporated after two days,
8 leaving the heavier tarry residues. From our research
9 studies we hypothesized three phases of oil effects on
10 the delta lakes.

11 The first is characterized by
12 acute toxicity, and lasts a matter of days. This
13 overlaps with and is followed by a period of physi-
14 cal entanglement or smothering, which lasts a few
15 weeks. Finally there may be prolonged chronic effects
16 similar to eutrophication.

17 This phenomenon is not usually
18 welcomed by society since it results in the proliferation
19 of 'nuisance' algae and 'trash' fish at the expense of more
20 desirable life forms. Ecologically the system has
21 become impoverished. Diversity of the system has de-
22 creased and the natural balance has been destroyed. The
23 implications of this could be far-reaching, depending
24 on the size of the area affected.

25 With respect to the delta, I'd
26 like to point out that I consider the lakes, clear ones
27 in particular, to be oases of productivity that
28 support not only the aquatic communities which I've
29 been looking at, but are integral components of a much
30 larger system encompassing local important species such

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 as the muskrat and waterfowl, all of which interact to
2 produce the typical delta ecosystems that exist today.

3 I have some general concerns.

4 So far I concentrated upon the delta area, its suscep-
5 tibility to petrochemical pollution and potential impact.

6 This does not mean that spill problems may not occur
7 or that they are of lesser importance elsewhere in the
8 Mackenzie Valley. Until an oil pipeline down the Macken-
9 zie Valley is a reality, I consider the main threat to
10 aquatic systems above the delta polluted by pipeline
11 petrochemicals to be fuel spills from one-man storage
12 sites or during transfer by pumps or trucks, and spills
13 of pipeline test fluid (methanol) either during the
14 testing process or during the transfer or storage.

15 Spills of even small to moderate
16 quantities of fuel into any of the relatively productive
17 clear-flowing eastern draining tributaries of the
18 Mackenzie to be crossed by the gas pipeline are likely to
19 cause impoverishment to the downstream areas similar to
20 that seen in an oil spill experiment we carried on in
21 Caribou/^{Bar}Creek. In this experiment, a small quantity of
22 crude oil caused a reduction in benthic organisms of
23 one-third their pre-spill abundance. Successive
24 spillages or heavier contamination may produce an even
25 greater decrease, thereby seriously affecting the
26 suitability of that stream for fish utilization and
27 impairing its overwintering capacity, or destroying its
28 spawning potential.

29 Our experimental section of
30 Caribou/^{Bar}Creek recovered almost completely one year

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 following the spill, but it may not be safe to extrapolate
2 this effect to any system, particularly where there is
3 a greater potential for substrate contamination than
4 we had at Caribou Bar. However, by virtue of different
5 sediment composition or large volumes of oil or fuel
6 spilled, streams in more temperate latitudes which had
7 been subjected to fuel spills have not recovered over a
8 period of four years.

9 The north has a history of
10 fuel spills in the thousands of gallons category, most of
11 which have been attributed to human error or equipment
12 malfunction. I have read articles concerning the delta
13 environmental protection unit contingency measures and
14 equipment, but I've never seen a comprehensive D.E.P.U.
15 contingency plan for the delta itself. Containment booms
16 and slick-lickers appear to be heavily relied upon in
17 the CAGSL application in the delta as a whole.

18 My main concern stems from the
19 fact that to the best of my knowledge, containment booms
20 are not effective in currents equalling or exceeding four
21 feet per second, two to three knots, or with effective
22 wave heights exceeding three feet. These conditions are
23 equalled or exceeded throughout much of the Mackenzie system.
24 Apart from the efficacy of such equipment, I have concerns
25 regarding the rate of execution of contingency measures
26 and training of personnel. These concerns can best be
27 framed in the following questions. I would ask the
28 applicant regarding his contingency plans:
29 (1) What measures are being taken to ensure that
30 transfers of fuel and other hazardous chemicals will take

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 place with minimal risk of spillage?

2 (2) Have the containment and cleanup measures envisaged
3 by the applicant been tested under the conditions which they're
4 anticipated to be used?

5 (3) Does the applicant intend to test such procedures
6 and equipment periodically? If so, how frequently, and
7 does he intend to have practice drills to ensure that
8 personnel are familiar with and proficient at executing
9 such procedures?

10 (4) How does the applicant intend to anchor a boom in
11 the Mackenzie River and what is the response time to de-
12 ploy such equipment?

13 I feel that any contingency
14 plan should at the very least cover these points. These
15 comments and concerns are also applicable to the gas-
16 gathering facilities, but they assume more
17 importance in this respect since storage and fuel
18 utilization at a specific location will probably be
19 greater than at similar sites along the trunk gas line.

20 The size of the area potentially
21 susceptible to spillage is also larger. This fact,
22 together with the low topographic relief at two of the
23 gas plant sites (that's Niglintgak and Taglu) coupled
24 with their proximity to the Beaufort Sea also increase
25 the potential ecological impact.

26 The gas producers are contributors
27 to DEPU and appear to be using that unit as the main
28 component of their contingency plans for spills in the
29 delta area. The misgivings I have concerning the
30 efficiency of booms are also pertinent in this context.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Because of the northerly location of two of the gas
2 plants, the distance to the coastal areas where fuel-
3 spill impact is likely to be greatest is very short.
4 Time for the deployment of containment and cleanup
5 equipment will likewise be very short. In the area of
6 Richards Island, which I am now considering, the topo-
7 graphic relief is very low and any failure or delay
8 in containing a fuel spill will expose the slick to
9 storm surges. This would increase the probability of
10 contaminating large areas of land and lakes as well as
11 the coastal region with its sensitive avifauna and
12 fish-rearing habitat.

13 An additional problem arises
14 in this area. Should a spill get out of control and
15 contaminate the coastline and inland areas resulting
16 from storm surge activity, and this is one of on-land
17 cleanup, because of the susceptibility of this particular
18 terrain to vehicular disturbance no heavy cleanup
19 equipment could be used there, and cleanup could only
20 be effective by using a large amount of manpower. I have
21 not seen this problem really taken into account in any
22 contingency plan.

23 Such concerns are relevant
24 when considering fuel spills originating at two of the
25 gas plant sites, but a new dimension is added when
26 considering effects on the same area resulting from
27 uncontained well head blowouts during offshore drilling
28 for oil. This is the substance of the Preliminary
29 Environmental Assessment - Offshore Drilling for Oil in
30 The Beaufort Sea, which is an exhibit at the Inquiry, and

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 I do not propose, therefore, to go into this issue in
2 detail as it's already been dealt with by Dr. Al Milne.

3 I would, however, like to
4 summarize the main points, and add a concern of my own
5 which I don't feel is addressed in that document.

6 Firstly, by virtue of the
7 possibility of large volumes of crude oil being released
8 over a long period of time, and also by virtue of the
9 locations of the proposed drill sites, the possibility
10 exists of far more extensive coastal and delta contamina-
11 tion than would be the case with fuel spills from
12 either the gas plant locations or trunk gas pipeline sites.

13 Secondly, a spill from either
14 of the proposed drill sites has a potential to contaminate
15 the first major lead which opens up annually offshore
16 from the delta. This is a very important zone with
17 respect to migratory birds, beluga whales and seals in
18 the spring, and the potential for impact is great. The
19 major concern with respect to contingency planning is
20 that we are largely in the realm of untried technology.
21 Any of the conventional containment and cleanup devices
22 currently used at offshore locations elsewhere have not
23 been proven to operate under ice-infested conditions
24 such as those obtaining in the Beaufort Sea. Some work
25 carried out under the auspices of the Beaufort Sea
26 project, indicate that under certain conditions oil in
27 the ice-covered areas can be burned off. There is no
28 doubt that fresh crude will burn even in Arctic condi-
29 tions, but weathered oil is another proposition. It
30 should be pointed out that attempts to remove "Torrey

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Canyon" oil at sea by burning were a failure, even with
2 the application of thousands of gallons of gasoline
3 and napalm. It's also impossible to ignite emulsified
4 oil and this brings me to the concern not really address-
5 ed in the Beaufort Sea assessment.

6 A well head blowout is
7 accompanied by large volumes of gas. The possibility
8 therefore exists that there may be extensive emulsification
9 of released oil. This would pose two problems:

10 (1) it would disperse the oil over a wider area, and
11 (2) it would destroy the ability to remove such oil by
12 burning, which is the most effective cleanup procedure
13 currently available.

14 Clearly there is a need for
15 speeding up of the research and development aspects of
16 oil spill containment in offshore areas. Devices
17 which are promised for Arctic operations are surface
18 curtains to contain -- to confine oil and gas from a
19 blowout to a drill site and possibly some form of
20 underwater containment such as a dome on the sea bed.

21 MR. BAYLY: Q Dr. Snow, perhaps
22 you could explain the phrase "surface curtain" for the
23 Commission.

24 A Oh, yes, these are one
25 of the devices which was investigated in the Balaena
26 Bay experiments. It is in fact a boom which is -- an
27 annulus is cut into the ice around the drill site and a
28 curtain is placed in suspended to three feet below the
29 surface, and weighted at the bottom of the skirt, hope-
30 fully to contain any oil or gas to the area of the

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 drill site, should a blowout occur on the sea bed.

2 Is that clear?

3 It's also clear that in the
4 case of oil or fuel spills, the old adage:

5 "An ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure,"
6 was never more true. The cost of cleanup following any
7 of the major Maritime oil spill disasters was enormous,
8 and the cost of compensating the local fishery alone
9 following the "Mizushima" oil spill in Japan was \$56
10 million. This is a personal communication from C.W.
11 Nichol, "Canadian Observer" at that spill.

12 This latter incident also has
13 implications in the current discussion of the delta impact.
14 The "Mizushima" spill of some 10½ million gallons of
15 hot bunker-C occurred when a steel storage tank in a
16 dyked enclosure ruptured. The dyke was breached and
17 oil flowed towards the harbour. The contingency plan
18 which was hitherto regarded as being adequate was
19 immediately executed. This involved 30,000 meters of
20 boom, 738 boats, 153 aircraft, a great deal of ancillary
21 equipment, and 8,189 workers. The spill could not
22 be successfully contained even by this massive operation.
23 Furthermore, it occurred under nearly ideal conditions,
24 i.e. manpower and equipment availability was no problem.
25 The area was relatively calm compared to the Beaufort
26 Sea and delta area. There are obviously grave
27 implications should a similar event occur in the
28 Canadian Arctic.

29 The adequacy of dyking procedures
30 is relevant to discussion of this and similar problems.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 It should go without saying that a dyked area should be
2 impermeable to the fluids it must contain but I know of at
3 least one fuel storage dyke in the north which was, and
4 still is, constructed of completely porous material.

5 The applicant states that his
6 dyked areas will be impermeable but details should be
7 provided as to how the required degree of impermeability
8 is to be achieved. The anticipated life span of such
9 dyked areas, inspection procedures and maintenance
10 programs. I now have concerns regarding pipeline
11 testing.

12 It's my understanding that the
13 applicant intends to use methanol as a freeze depressant
14 in testing of all pipeline sections north of 60. The
15 applicant states that test sections will be ten-mile
16 spread chilled by 26% methanol solution. I believe this
17 test spread size has now been reduced to three miles.
18 The proposed method of disposal of the 1% solution
19 doesn't, in my opinion, pose a major threat to the
20 integrity of aquatic ecosystems. But this is not the
21 case with the 26% solution. The applicant has no speci-
22 fic contingency plan to deal with the possibility of
23 all the methanol contained in a test spread somewhat
24 in excess of a million gallons, being released during
25 a test. Methanol solutions of only a few % have been shown
26 by the applicant to pose a threat to Arctic fish and
27 their eggs. The greatest impact of a methanol spill
28 during a test would occur if all the fluid entered
29 low discharge clear river, such as most of the eastern
30 tributaries of the Mackenzie, which have flow under ice

Pettigrew, Snow, Legan
In Chief

1 during the winter.

2 I have estimated that if this
3 were to occur, say in the Martin River, at its lowest
4 winter discharge, which is approximately five cubic
5 feet per second, the methanol -- this would be equivalent
6 to methanol replacing the normal water flow for 11 hours
7 over a distance of two-thirds of a mile. Assuming
8 dilution of the methanol to 4%, once it got into the
9 river, these two figures would be increased by a factor
10 of six. A 4% solution will adversely affect fish
11 eggs and probably also most of the benthic invertebrates
12 contained in the affected section of the river.

13 By contrast, if the spill event
14 occurred at the proposed East Channel crossing site, the
15 impact would be negligible, owing to the relatively high
16 discharge even during winter, approximately 26,500 cubic
17 feet per second. The corresponding figures for this
18 crossing would be seven seconds in .7 feet. The dilution
19 effect is readily apparent.

20 Lakes present a different set
21 of problems, since their water is static on the winter
22 ice, and dilution of introduced methanol would be a
23 very slow process. Assuming a small lake similar to
24 those close to the pipeline route with a volume of
25 12 million gallons, the introduction of a 26% methanol
26 from a three-mile spread would ultimately result in a
27 5% solution in the lake, and this is cause for concern.
28 Larger lakes affected in this way would be expected to have
29 lesser impacts in relation to their larger volume.

30 I would like to emphasize that

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 these estimates are based on assumptions and probably
2 at best give the problem an order of magnitude. It would
3 assist the assessment of impact if the applicant were
4 to give detailed information concerning the actual
5 test procedure itself, particularly at water bodies.

6 Finally I have a set of
7 recommendations. To alleviate the major concerns I've
8 outlined, I propose the following recommendations:

9 (1) High priority should be given to the early detection
10 of spill incidents and to the training of
11 conscientious operators and supervisory personnel.

12 (2) High priority should be given to dyked area design,
13 construction and inspection.

14 (3) Oil spill containment and cleanup technology research
15 and development should be accelerated.

16 (4) Adequate environmental monitoring programs should
17 be set up to follow all aspects of pipeline construction,
18 operation and maintenance. These would probably best
19 be carried out by joint industry, federal agencies.

20 (5) Federal regulatory and enforcement agencies should
21 ensure that there are adequate personnel to deal with a
22 development of the nature and magnitude as that proposed.

23 (6) In the absence of an adequate contingency plan to
24 deal with methanol spillage during pipeline testing, the
25 applicant should reconsider the use of heated water as
26 a test fluid with its subsequent return to natural
27 water courses after treatment, cooling and aeration.

28 MR. BAYLY: Mr. Commissioner,
29 this panel is now available for cross-examination and I
30 don't know if you want that to begin this afternoon or on

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 Monday.

2 MR. GOUDGE: I think it would be
3 more expeditious for a number of reasons if we broke now
4 and commenced Monday with the cross-examination.

5 THE COMMISSIONER: Right. Well
6 I think we should begin at 9:30 Monday, returning to our
7 usual hours of sitting and would you, Mr. Goudge, make
8 sure that Dr. Milne is asked, when he returns to the
9 stand, to comment on Dr. Snow's observations on the
10 consequences of the emulsification of oil and the matters
11 he said regarding the impact that would have on dispersal
12 of the oil and on something else. It must be time to
13 adjourn.

14 What was the other thing?

15 A Ignitability.

16 THE COMMISSIONER:
Yes, ignitability, of course,
17 because that was an important part of Dr. Milne's presen-
18 tation. Don't forget to bring that up when he returns
19 to the stand.

20 All right, we'll adjourn till
21 9:30 Monday morning, and the community hearing will be
22 two o'clock tomorrow afternoon at the Ingamo Hall. So
23 thank you, Mr. Pettigrew, Dr. Snow, Mr. Logan.

24 MR. MARSHALL: Mr. Commissioner,
25 I wonder if counsel should have a word about our
26 schedule for next week so we can --

27 THE COMMISSIONER: Certainly.

28 MR. GOUDGE: Perhaps we could
29 take five minutes after we adjourn.

30 THE COMMISSIONER: Yes, fine.

Pettigrew, Snow, Logan
In Chief

1 (REPORT ON SHALLOW SEISMIC SURVEY IN 3 AREAS
2 OF MACKENZIE DELTA, 1975, MARKED EXHIBIT 469)
3 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF R.K. PETTIGREW
4 MARKED EXHIBIT 470)
5 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF N. SNOW MARKED
6 EXHIBIT 471)
7 (QUALIFICATIONS & EVIDENCE OF W.J. LOGAN
8 MARKED EXHIBIT 472)

9
10 (PROCEEDINGS ADJOURNED TO FEBRUARY 16, 1976)
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30

347
M835
vol.125

(Berger Hearings)

AUTHOR

14 Feb., '76.

Mackenzie Valley Pipeline-
Inquiry

DATE DUE

BORROWER'S

347
M835
vol.125

3 1761 11468058 0

